Geneva Bible 1599
The Geneva Bible in Old English of 1599

Public Domain
Language: English
Dialect: Old

This digital copy is freely available world-wide, with no copyright restrictions, courtesy of eBible.org and many others.

2018-11-11

PDF generated using Haiola and XeLaTeX on 28 Jul 2020 from source files dated 23 Jun 2020
cb1feedd-30b1-5769-8574-fc9e5e9c6e45
## Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Matthew</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mark</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Romans</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Corinthians</td>
<td>178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians</td>
<td>192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galatians</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ephesians</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philippians</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Colossians</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Thessalonians</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Thessalonians</td>
<td>223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Timothy</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Timothy</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Titus</td>
<td>232</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philemon</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hebrews</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James</td>
<td>246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Peter</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Peter</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 John</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 John</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 John</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jude</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Revelation</td>
<td>265</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1 The booke of the generation of Jesus Christ the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham. 2 Abraham begate Isaac. And Isaac begate Iacob. And Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren. 3 And Iudas begate Phares, and Zara of Thamar. And Phares begate Esrom. And Esrom begate Aram. 4 And Aram begate Aminadab. And Aminadab begate Naasson. And Naasson begat Salmon. 5 And Salmon begate Booz of Rachab. And Booz begat Obed of Ruth. and Obed begat Jesse. 6 And Jesse begate Dauid the King. And Dauid the King begate Salomon of her that was the wife of Vrias. 7 And Salomon begate Roboam. And Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Asa. 8 And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Hozias. 9 And Hozias begat Ioatham. And Ioatham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Ezekias. 10 And Ezekias begate Manasses. And Manasses begate Amon. And Amon begate Iosias. 11 And Iosias begate Iakim. And Iakim begate Iechonias and his brethren about the time they were carried away to Babylon. 12 And after they were carried away into Babylon, Iechonias begate Salathiel. And Salathiel begate Zorobabel. 13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim. And Eliacim begate Azor. 14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud. 15 And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar begate Matthan. And Matthan begate Iacob. 16 And Iacob begat Ioseph ye husband of Mary, of whom was borne Jesus, that is called Christ. 17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourtene generations. And from Dauid vntil they were caried away into Babylon, fourtene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntill Christ, fourtene generations. 18 Nowe the birth of Jesus Christ was thus, When as his mother Mary was betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, shee was found with childe of the holy Ghost. 19 Then Ioseph her husband being a lust man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly. 20 But whiles he thought these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph, the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost. 21 And she shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for hee shall saue his people from their sinnes. 22 And al this was done that it might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by ye Prophet, saying, 23 Behold, a virgine shalbe with childe, and shall beare a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs. 24 Then Ioseph, being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had inioyned him, and tooke his wife. 25 But he knew her not, til she had brought forth her first borne sonne, and he called his name JESUS.

2 1 When Jesus then was borne at Bethleem in Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the King, beholde, there came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem, 2 Saying, Where is that King of the Iewes that is borne? for wee haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him. 3 When King Herod heard this, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him. 4 And gathering together all the chiefe Priestes and Scribes of the people, hee asked of them, where Christ should be borne. 5 And they saide vnto him, At Beth-leem
in Iudea: for so it is written by the Prophet, 6 And thou Beth-leem in the lande of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: For out of thee shall come the gouernour that shall feede that my people Is-rael. 7 Then Herod priuely called the Wisemen, and diligently inquired of them the time of the starre that appeared, 8 And sent them to Beth-leem, saying, Goe, and searche diligently for the babe: and when ye haue founde him, bring mee worde againe, that I may come also, and worship him. 9 So when they had heard the King, they departed: and loe, the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, till it came and stooде over the place where the babe was. 10 And when they sawe the starre, they rejoied with an ex-ceeding great joy, 11 And went into the house, and founde the babe with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, and presented vnto him giftes, euen golde, and frankincense, and myrrhe. 12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, that they should not go againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way. 13 After their departure, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there til I bring thee word: for Herod will seke the babe, to destroy him. 14 So he arose and tooke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt, 15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my sonne. 16 Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent foorth, and slew all the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeere old and vnder, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the Wisemen. 17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying, 18 In Rama was a voyce heard, mourning, and weeping, and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they were not. 19 And whe Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt, 20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life. 21 Then he arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. 22 But whe he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile, 23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, which was, That hee should be called a Nazarite.

3 1 And in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came and preached in the wildernes of Iudea, 2 And said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand. 3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernes, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his pathes straight. 4 And this Iohn had his garment of camels heare, and a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: his meate was also locuste and wilde hony. 5 Then went out to him Ierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region ronde about Iordan. 6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes. 7 Now when he sawe many of the Pharises, and of the Sadduces come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the anger to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruite worthy amendment of life. 9 And
thine not to say with your selues, We haue Abraham to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is able euen of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham. 10 And now also is the axe put to the roote of the trees: tharfore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into ye fire. 11 In deedie I baptize you with water to amendment of life, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthie to beare: hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. 12 Which hath his fanne in his hand, and wil make cleane his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire. 13 Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. 14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue neede to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me? 15 Then Iesus answering, saide to him, Let be nowe: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteounes. So he suffered him. 16 And Iesus when hee was baptized, came straight out of the water. And lo, the heaues were opened vnto him, and Iohn saw the Spirit of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him. 17 And loe, a voyce came from heauen, saying, This is my beloved Sonne, in whome I am well pleased.

4

1 Then was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the deuil. 2 And when he had fasted fourtie daies, and fourtie nights, he was afterward hungrie. 3 Then came to him the tempter, and said, If thou be the Sonne of God, commande that these stones be made bread. 4 But he answering said, It is written, Man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery worde that pro- ceedeth out of the mouth of God. 5 Then the deuil tooke him vp into the holy Citie, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, 6 And said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selue downe: for it is written, that he wil giue his Angels charge ouer thee, and with their hands they shall lift thee vp, lest at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone. 7 Iesus saide vnto him, It is written againe, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them, 9 And sayd to him, All these will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe, and worship me. 10 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Auoyde Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue. 11 Then the deuil left him: and beholde, the Angels came, and ministred vnto him. 12 And when Jesus had heard that Iohn was committed to prison, he returned into Galile. 13 And leauing Nazareth, went and dwelt in Capernaum, which is neere the sea in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim. 14 That it might be ful- filled which was spoken by Esaias the Propet, saying, 15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim by the way of the sea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles: 16 The people which sate in darkenes, sawe great light: and to them which sate in the region, and shadowe of death, light is risen vp. 17 From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Amende your liues: for the kingdom of heauen is at hand. 18 And Iesus walking by the sea of Galile, sawe two brethren, Simon, which was called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea (for they were fishers.) 19 And he sayd vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. 20 And they straightway leauing the nets, followed him. 21 And when he was gone forth from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the sonne of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother in a ship with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and he called them. 22 And they without
taryng, leauing the ship, and their father, folowed hym. 23 So Iesus went about all Galile, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and heal- ing euery sicknesse and euery dis- ease among the people. 24 And his fame spread abroad through all Syria: and they brought vnto hym all sicke people, that were taken with diuers diseases and tormentes, and them that were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunatike, and those that had the palesey: and he healed them. 25 And there folowed hym great mul-
titudes out of Galile, and Decapolis, and Hierusalem, and Iuda, and from beyond Iordan.

5

1 And when he saw the multi-
tude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came to hym. 2 And he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poore in spirit, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.
4 Blessed are they that mourne: for they shall be comforted. 5 Blessed are the meeee: for they shall inherit the earth. 6 Blessed are they which hunger and thirst for righteousnes: for they shalbe filled. 7 Blessed are the mercifull: for they shall obteine mercie. 8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. 9 Blessed are the peace makers: for they shall be called the children of God. 10 Blessed are they which suffer persecution for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. 11 Blessed shall ye be when men reule you, and per- secute you, and say all maner of eu- ill against you for my sake, falsely. 12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen: for so per- secuted they the Prophets which were before you. 13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt haue lost his saour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid. 15 Neither doe men light a candell, and put it vnder a bushel, but on a candlesticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen. 17 Think not that I am come to destroy the Lawe, or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy them, but to fulfill them. 18 For truely I say vnto you, Till heauen, and earth perish, one iote or one title of the Law shall not scape, till all things be ful-
filled. 19 Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least comman-
dements, and teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall ob-
serue and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen. 20 For I say vnto you, except your righteousnes excede the righteousnes of the Scribes and Pharises, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen. 21 Ye haue heard that it was sayd vnto them of the olde time, Thou shalt not kill: for whosoeuer killeth shalbe culpable of judgement. 22 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer is angry with his brother vnaduisedely, shalbe culpable of judgment. And whosoeuer sayth vnto his brother, Raca, shalbe worthy to be punished by the Councill. And whosoeuer shall say, Foole, shalbe worthy to be pun-
ished with hell fire. 23 If then thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee, 24 Leae there thine offering before the altar, and goe thy way: first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine aduersarie quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him, lest thine aduersarie deli-
er thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer thee to ye servant, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out
to him that asketh, and from him that would borowe of thee, turne not away. 43 Ye haue heard that it hath bin said, Thou shalt loye thy neighbour, and hate your enemie. 44 But I say vnto you, Loue your enemies: blesse them that curse you: doe good to them that hate you, and pray for them which hurt you, and persecute you, 45 That ye may be the children of your father that is in heaven: for he maketh his sunne to arise on the euill, and the good, and sendeth raine on the iust, and vniust. 46 For if ye loue them, which loue you, what rewarde shall you have? Doe not the Publicanes euem the same? 47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren onely, what singular thing doe ye? doe not euem the Publicanes likewise? 48 Ye shall therefore be perfite, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfite.

6

1 Take heede that ye giue not your almes before men, to be seene of them, or els ye shall haue no reward of your Father which is in heau. 2 Therefore when thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee, as the hypocrites doe in the Synagogues and in the streetes, to be prayed of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their warre. 3 But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand knowe what thy right hand doeth, 4 That thine almes may be in secret, and thy Father that seeth in secret, hee will warre thee openly. 5 And when thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand, and pray in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streetes, because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their warre. 6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy chamber and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall warre thee openly. 7 Also when ye
pray, use no vain repetitions as the Heathen: for they think to be heard for their much babbling. 8 Be ye not like them therefore: for your Father knoweth whereof ye have neede, before ye ask of him. 9 After this manner therefore pray ye, Our father which art in heauen, halowed be thy name. 10 Thy Kingdome come. Thy will be done euен in earth, as it is in heauen. 11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread. 12 And forgiue vs our dettes, as we also forgiue our detters. 13 And leade vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs from euill: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glorie for euer. Amen. 14 For if ye doe forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father will also forgiue you. 15 But if ye do not forgiue men their trespasses, no more will your father forgiue you your trespasses. 16 Moreover, when ye fast, looke not sower as the hypocrites: for they disfigure their faces, that they might see me vs men to fast. Verely I say vs to you, that they haue their reward. 17 But when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face, 18 That thou seeme not vs men to fast, but vs to thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, will reward thee openly. 19 Lay not vs treasures for your selues vpon the earth, where the mothe and canker corrupt, and where theeeues digge through and steale. 20 But lay vs treasures for your selues in heauen, where neither the mothe nor canker corrupteth, and where theeeues neither digge through, nor steale. 21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 22 The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be light. 23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy body shall be darke. Wherefore if the light that is in thee, be darkenes, howe great is that darkenesse? 24 No man can serue two masters: for eyther he shall hate the one, and loue the other, or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches. 25 Therefore I say vs to you, be not carefull for your life, what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke: nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more worth then meate? and the bodie then raiment? 26 Behold the foules of the heauen: for they sowe not, neither reappe, nor carie into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they? 27 Which of you by taking care is able to add one cubite to his stature? 28 And why care ye for raiment? Learne howe the lilies of the fiele doe growe: they are not weared, neither spinne: 29 Yet I say vs to you, that euen Salomon in all his glorie was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the fiele which is to day, and to morowe is cast into the ouen, shall he not doe much more vs to you, O ye of little faith? 31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke? or where with shall we be clothed? 32 (For after all these things seeke the Gentiles) for your heauenly Father knoweth, that ye haue neede of all these things. 33 But seeke ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be ministred vs to you. 34 Care not then for the morowe: for the morowe shall care for it selfe: the day hath ynome with his owne grieue.

7

1 Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2 Eor with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged, and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you againe. 3 And why seest thou the mote, that is in thy brothers eye, and perceuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? 4 Or howe sayest thou to thy brother, Suffer me to cast out the mote out of thine eye, and beholde, a beame is in thine owne eye? 5 Hypocrite, first cast out that
beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast
out the mote out of thy brothers eye. 6 Giue ye not that which is holy, to
dogges, neither cast ye your pearles before swine, lest they tredde them
vnder their feete, and turning againe, all to rent you. 7 Aske, and it shall
be giuen you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shall be opened
vtnto you. 8 For whosoever asketh, receiueth: and he, that seeketh, find-
eth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. 9 For what man is
there among you, which if his sonne
aske him bread, woulde giue him a
stone? 10 Or if he aske fish, wil he giue
him a serpent? 11 If ye then, which
are euill, can giue to your children
good giftes, howe much more shall
your Father which is in heauen, giue
good things to them that aske him?
12 Therefore whatsoeuer ye woulde
that men should doe to you, euen so
doe ye to them: for this is the
Lawe and the Prophets. 13 Enter in at
the streight gate: for it is the wide
gate, and broade way that leadeth
to destruction: and many there be
which goe in thereat, 14 Because the
gate is streight, and the way narowe
that leadeth vnto life, and fewe there
be that finde it. 15 Beware of false
prophets, which come to you, in
sheepe\'s clothing, but inwardly they
are rauening wolves. 16 Ye shall know
them by their fruites. Doe men gather
grapes of thornes? or figges of this-
tles? 17 So euery good tree bringeth
dowrth good fruite, and a corrupt
tree bringeth dowrth euill fruite. 18 A
good tree can not bring forth euill
fruite: neither can a corrupt tree
bring forth good fruite. 19 Euery tree
that bringeth not forth good fruite,
is hewen dounne, and cast into the
fire. 20 Therefore by their fruites ye
shall knowe them. 21 Not euery one
that sayeth vnto me, Lord, Lord, shall
enter into the kingdome of heauen,
but he that doeth my Fathers will
which is in heauen. 22 Many will say
to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue
we not by thy Name prophesied? and
by thy name cast out deuils? and by
thy name done many great workes?
23 And then will I professe to them,
I neuer knewe you: depart from me,
ye that worke iniquitie. 24 Whosoever
then heareth of mee these words, and
doeth the same, I will liken him to
a wise man, which hath builded his
house on a rock: 25 And the raine fell,
and the floods came, and the windes
blewe, and beat vpon that house, and
it fell not: for it was grounded on
a rocke. 26 But whosoever heareth
these my wordes, and doeth them
not, shall be likened vnto a foolish
man, which hath builded his house
vpon the sand: 27 And the raine fell,
and the floods came, and the windes
blewe, and beat vpon that house, and
it fell, and the fall thereof was great.
28 And it came to passe, when Jesus
had ended these worde, the people
were astonied at his doctrine. 29 For
he taught them as one hauing author-
itie, and not as the Scribes.

8

1 Nowe when he was come downe
from the mountaine, great multi-
tudes followed him. 2 And loe, there
came a Leper and worshipped him,
saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou
canst make me cleane. 3 And Jesus
putting foorth his hand, touched him,
saying, I will, be thou cleane: and
immediatly his leprosie was clensed.
4 Then Jesus saide vnto him, See thou
tell no man, but goe, and shewe thy
selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the
gift that Moses commanded, for a
witnesse to them. 5 When Jesus was
entred into Capernaum, there came
vnto him a Centurion, beseeching
him, 6 And saide, Master, my seruant
lieth sicke at home of the palsie, and
is grieuously pained. 7 And Jesus saide
vnto him, I will come and heale him.
8 But the Centurion answered, saying,
Master, I am not worthy that thou
shouldest come vnder my rooфе: but
speake the worde onely, and my seruant shall be healed. 9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie of an other, and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commmeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it. 10 When Jesus heard that, he marueiled, and said to them that followed him, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, euen in Israel. 11 But I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdom of heauen. 12 And the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into vtter darkenes: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 Then Jesus saide vnto the Centurion, Goe thy way, and as thou hast beleued, so be it vnto thee, And his seruant was healed the same houre. 14 And when Jesus came to Peters house, he sawe his wifes mother layed downe, and sicke of a feuer. 15 And he touched her hande, and the feuer left her: so she arose, and ministred vnto them. 16 When the Euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out the spirits with his worde, and healed all that were sicke, 17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, He tooke our infirmities, and bare our sickenesses. 18 And when Jesus sawe great multitudes of people about him, he commanded them to goe ouer the water. 19 Then came there a certaine Scribe, and said vnto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. 20 But Jesus saide vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birdes of the heauen haue nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to rest his head. 21 And another of his disciples saide vnto him, Master, suffer me first to goe, and bury my father. 22 But Jesus said vnto him, Followe me, and let the dead bury their dead. 23 And when he was entred into ye ship, his disciples followed him. 24 And beholde, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that the ship was cowered with waues: but he was a sleepe. 25 Then his disciples came, and awoke him, saying, Master, saue vs: we perish. 26 And he said vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea: and so there was a great calme. 27 And the men marueiled, saying, What man is this, that both the windes and the sea obey him! 28 And when he was come to the other side into ye countrie of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, which came out of the graues very fierce, so that no man might goe by that way. 29 And beholde, they cryed out, saying, Jesus the sonne of God, what haue we to do with thee? Art thou come hither to torment vs before ye time? 30 Nowe there was, afarre off from them, a great heard of swine feeding. 31 And the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe into the heard of swine. 32 And he said vnto them, Go. So they went out and departed into the heard of swine: and beholde, the whole heard of swine ranne headlong into the sea, and died in the water. 33 Then the heardmen fled: and when they were come into the citie, they tolde all things, and what was become of them that were possessed with the deuils. 34 And beholde, all ye citie came out to meete Iesus: and when they sawe him, they besought him to depart out of their coastes.

9

1 Then hee entred into a shippe, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie. 2 And loe, they brought to him a man sicke of the palseie, laid on a bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, saide to the sicke of the palseie, Sonne, be of good comfort: thy sinnen are forgien thee. 3 And beholde, certaine of the Scribes saide with themselues, This man blaspemeth. 4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts,
he said, Wherefore thinke ye evil things in your hearts? 5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgien thee, or to say, Arise, and walke? 6 And that ye may knowe that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgie sinnes, (then saide he vnto the sickie of the palsy,) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house. 7 And hee arose, and departed to his owne house. 8 So when the multitude sawe it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which had giuen such authoritie to men. 9 And as Iesus passed foorth from thence, hee sawe a man sitting at the custome, named Matthewe, and saide to him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him. 10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in his house, beholde, many Publicanes and sinners, that came thither, sate downe at the table with Iesus and his disciples. 11 And when the Pharises sawe that, they saide to his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners? 12 Nowe when Iesus heard it, hee sayde vnto them, The whole neede not a Physition, but they that are sicke. 13 But goo yee and learne what this is, I will haue mercie, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance. 14 Then came the disciples of John to him, saying, Why doe we and the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not? 15 And Iesus saide vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber mourne as long as the bridegome is with them? But the daies will come, when the bridegome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. 16 Moreouer no man pieceth an olde garment with a piece of newe cloth: for that that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breach is worse. 17 Neither doe they put newe wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, and the wine woulde be spilt, and the vessels shoulde perish: but they put newe wine into newe vessels, and so are both preserued. 18 While hee thus spake vnto them, beholde, there came a certaine ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is nowe deceased, but come and laie thine hande on her, and shee shall lyue. 19 And Iesus arose and followed him with his disciples. 20 (And beholde, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment. 21 For shee saide in her selfe, If I may touche but his garment onely, I shalbe whole. 22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same moment.) 23 Nowe when Iesus came into the Rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the multitude making noise, 24 He said vnto them, Get you hence: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. 25 And when the multitude were put foorth, hee went in and tooke her by the hande, and the maide arose. 26 And this brute went throughout all that lande. 27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, O sonne of Dauid, haue mercie vpon vs. 28 And when hee was come into the house, the blinde came to him, and Iesus saide vnto them, Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? And they sayd vnto him, Yea, Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you. 30 And their eyes were opened, and Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man knowe it. 31 But when they were departed, they spread abroad his fame throughout all that land. 32 And as they went out, beholde, they brought to him a domme man possessed with a deuill. 33 And when the deuill was cast out, the domme spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was never seene in Israel. 34 But the Pharises saide, He casteth out deuils, through the prince of deuils. 35 And Iesus went about
all cities and townes, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickenesse and euery disease among the people. 36 But when he saw the multitude, he had compasion vpon them, because they were dispersed, and scattered abroade, as sheepe hauing no shepheard. 37 Then saide he to his disciples, Surely the haruest is great, but the labourers are fewe. 38 Wherefore pray the Lord of the haruest, that he woule sende foorth labourers into his haruest.

10

1 And hee called his twelue disciples vnto him, and gaued them power against vnclene spirits, to cast them out, and to heale euery sickenesse, and euery disease. 2 Nowe the names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first is Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother: Iames the sonne of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother. 3 Philippe and Bartlemewe: Thomas, and Matthewe that Publicane: Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Lepbeus whose surname was Thaddeus: 4 Simon the Cananite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. 5 These twelue did Jesus send forth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritans enter yee not: 6 But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. 7 And as ye goe, preach, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand. 8 Heale the sicke: cleanse the lepers: raise vp the dead: cast out the devils. Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue. 9 Possesse not golde, nor siluer, nor money in your girdels, 10 Nor a scrippe for the iourny, neither two coates, neither shoes, nor a staffe: for the workeman is worthie of his meate. 11 And into whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shall come, enquire who is worthy in it, and there abide till yee goe thence. 12 And when yee come into an house, salute the same. 13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthie, let your peace returne to you. 14 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your wordes, when yee depart out of that house, or that citie, shake off the dust of your feete. 15 Truely I say vnto you, it shall be easier for them of the lande of Sodom and Go-morrha in the day of judgement, then for that citie. 16 Behold, I send you as sheepe in the middes of the wolves: be yee therefore wise as serpents, and innocent as doues. 17 But beware of men, for they will deliuer you vp to the Councills, and will scourge you in their Synagogues. 18 And ye shall be brought to the gouernours and Kings for my sake, in witnes to them, and to the Gentiles. 19 But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought howe or what ye shall speake: for it shall be giuen you in that houre, what ye shall say. 20 For it is not yee that speake, but the spirite of your father which speaketh in you. 21 And the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against their parents, and shall cause them to die. 22 And yee shall be hated of all men for my Name: but he that endureth to the end, he shall be saued. 23 And when they persecute you in this citie, flee into another: for verely I say vnto you, yee shall not goe ouer all the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come. 24 The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his Lord. 25 It is ynoough for the disciple to bee as his master is, and the seruaunt as his Lord. If they haue called the master of the house Beel-zebub, howe much more them of his housholde? 26 Feare them not therefore: for there is nothing couered, that shall not be disclosed, nor hid, that shall not be known. 27 What I tell you in darkenesse, that speake yee in light: and what yee heare in the eare, that preach yee on the houses. 28 And feare yee not them which kill the bodie, but are nor able to kill the
11

1 And it came to passe that when Jesus had made an ende of commoun
ding his twelve disciples, hee de-
parted thence to teache and to preach
in their cities. 2 And when John
heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and sayde vnto him, 3 Art thou he
that shoulde come, or shall we looke
for another? 4 And Iesus answering,
said vnto them, Goe, and shewe Iohn,
what things ye heare, and see. 5 The
blinde receiue sight, and the halt doe
walke: the lepers are clensed, and
the deafe heare, the dead are raised
vp, and the poore receiue the Gospel.
6 And blessed is he that shall not be
offended in me. 7 And as they de-
parted, Iesus beganne to speake vnto
the multitude, of Iohn, What went
ye out into the wildernes to see? 8 A
reedle shaken with the winde? 9 But
what went ye out to see? 10 For this
is he of whom it is written, Beholde, I send
my messenger before thy face, which
shall prepare thy way before thee.
11 Verely I say vnto you, among them
which are begotten of women, arose
there not a greater then John Baptist:
notwithstanding, he that is the least
in the kingdom of heauen, is greater
then he. 12 And from the time of
Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdom
of heauen suffereth violence, and the
violent take it by force. 13 For all the
Prophetes and the Lawe prophesied
vnto Iohn. 14 And if ye will receiue it,
this is that Elias, which was to come.
15 He that hath eares to heare, let
him heare. 16 But whereunto shall
I liken this generation? It is like
vnto litle children which sit in the
markets, and call vnto their fellowes,
17 And say, We haue piped vnto you,
and ye haue not danced, we haue
mourned vnto you, and ye haue not
lamented. 18 For Iohn came neither
eating nor drinking, and they say, He
hath a deuill. 19 The sonne of man
came eating and drinking, and they
say, Beholde a glutton and a drinker
of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes and
sinners: but wisedome is justified of
her children. 20 Then began he to vpbraide the cities, wherein most of
his great workes were done, because they repented not. 21 Woe be to
thee, Chorazin: Woe be to thee, Bethsaida: for if ye great workes, which
were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented
long agone in sackecloth and ashes. 22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier
for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you. 23 And thou,
Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to
hell: for if the great workes, which haue bin done in thee, had bene done
among them of Sodom, they had remained to this day. 24 But I say
vnto you, that it shall be easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day
of judgement, then for thee. 25 At that time Iesus answered, and saide,
I giue thee thankes, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou
hast hid these things from the wise and men of vnderstanding, and hast
opened them vnto babes. 26 It is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure
was such. 27 All things are giuen vnto me of my Father: and no man
knoweth the Sonne, but ye Father: neither knoweth any man ye Father,
but the Sonne, and he to whom ye Sonne will reueile him. 28 Come vnto
me, all ye that are wareie and laden, and I will ease you. 29 Take my yoke
on you, and learne of me that I am meeke and lowly in heart: and ye shall finde
rest vnto your soules. 30 For my yoke is easie, and my burden light.

12

1 At that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day through ye corne, and his
disciples were an hungred, and bega to plucke ye eares of corne and to
eate. 2 And when the Pharises sawe it, they saide vnto him, Beholde, thy
disciples doe that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath. 3 But he said
vnto them, Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred,
Name shall the Gentiles trust. 22 Then was brought to him one, possessed with a devil, both blind, and dumb, and he healed him, so that he which was blind and dumb, both spake and saw. 23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this that sonne of Daud? 24 But when the Pharises heard it, they said, This man casteth the deuils no otherwise out, but through Beelzebub the prince of deuils. 25 But Jesus knew their thoughtes, and said to them, Euerie kindome deuided against it selfe, is brought to nought: and euerie citie or house, deuided against it selfe, shall not stand. 26 So if Satan cast out Satan, he is deuided against himselfe: how shall then his kingdom endure? 27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. 28 But if I cast out deuils by ye Spirit of God, then is the kindome of God come vnto you. 29 Els howe can a man enter into a strong mans house and spoyle his goods, except he first bind the strong man, and then spoile his house. 30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth. 31 Wherefore I say vnto you, euer sinne and blasphemie shalbe forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiuen vnto men. 32 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer shall speake against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen him, neither in this worlde, nor in the worlde to come. 33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: or els make the tree euill, and his fruite euill: for the tree is known by the fruite. 34 O generations of vipers, howe can you speake good things, when ye are euill? For of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. 35 A good man out of the good treasoure of his heart bringeth forth euill things: and an euill man out of an euill treasure, bringeth forth euill things. 36 But I say vnto you, that of euery idle word that men shall speake, they shall giue account thereof at the day of judgement. 37 For by thy wordes thou shalt be justified, and by thy wordes thou shalt be condemned. 38 Then answered certaine of ye Scribes and of the Pharises, saying, Master, we would see a signe of thee. 39 But he answered and said to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shall be giuen vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas. 40 For as Ionas was three daies and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne of man be three daies and three nights in ye heart of the earth. 41 The men of Nineue shall rise in judgement with this generation, and condemne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas; and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. 42 The Queene of the South shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Salomon: and beholde, a greater then Salomon is here. 43 Nowe when the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I wil returne into mine house from whence I came: and when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept and garnished. 45 Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him seuen other spirits worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the ende of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shall it be with this wicked generation. 46 While he yet speake to ye multitude, beholde, his mother, and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him. 47 Then one said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee. 48 But he an- wered, and said to him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are
my brethren? 49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Beholde my mother and my brethren. 50 For whosoever shall doe my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is my brother and sister and mother.

13

1 The same day went Iesus out of the house, and sate by the sea side. 2 And great multitudes resorted vnto him, so that he went into a ship, and sate downe: and the whole multitude stooode on the shore. 3 Then he spake many things to them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sowe. 4 And as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the foules came and deououred them vp. 5 And some fell vpon stony grounde, where they had not much earth, and anon they sprong vp, because they had no depth of earth. 6 And when the sunne was vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, withered away. 7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprong vp, and choked them. 8 Some againe fel in good ground, and brought forth fruite, one corne an hundreth fold, some sixtie fold, and another thirtie fold. 9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 10 Then the disciples came, and said to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables? 11 And he answered, and said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you, to know the secretes of the kingdome of heauen, but to the it is not giue. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shalbe taken away, euen that he hath. 13 Therefore speake I to them in parables, because they seeing, doe not see: and hearing, they heare not, neither vnderstand. 14 So in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias, which prophecie saieth, By hearing, ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing, ye shall see, and shall not perceiue. 15 For this peoples heart is waxed fat, and their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes they haue winked, lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their hearts, and should returne, that I might heale them. 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare. 17 For verely I say vnto you, that many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them, and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them. 18 Heare ye therefore ye para- ble of ye sower. 19 Whensoeuer any man heareth the woorde of that kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, that eui one commeth, and catcheth away that which was sownen in his heart: and this is he which hath received the seede by the way side. 20 And hee that receiued seede in the stonie grounde, is he which heareth the woorde, and incontinently with joy receiuemeth it. 21 Yet hath he no roote in himselfe, and dureth but a season: for assoone as tribulation or persecution commeth because of the woorde, by and by he is offended. 22 And hee that receiued the seede among thornes, is hee that heareth the woorde: but the care of this worlde, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the word, and he is made vnfruitfull. 23 But he that receiued the seede in the good ground, is he that heareth the worde, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruite, and bringeth forth, some an hundreth fold, some sixtie fold, and some thirtie fold. 24 Another parable put hee forth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man which sowed good seede in his fielde. 25 But while men slept, there came his enemie, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his waie. 26 And when the blade was sprong vp, and brought forth fruite, then appeared the tares also. 27 Then came the seruaunts of the housholder, and sayd vnto him, Master, sowedst not
thou good seede in thy fielde? from whence then hath it tares? And hee said to them, Some enuious man hath done this. Then the seruants saide vnsto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them vp? But he saide, Nay, lest while yee goe about to gather the tares, yee plucke vp also with them the wheat. Let both growe together vntill the haruest, and in time of haruest I will say to the reapers, Gather yee first the tares, and binde them in sheaues to burne them: but gather the wheate into my barne. Another parable he put foorth vnsto them, saying, The kingdom of heauen is like vnsto a graine of mustard seede, which a man taketh and soweth in his fielde: Which in deede is the least of all seedes: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbes, and it is a tree, so that the birdes of heauen come and builde in the branches thereof. Another parable spake hee to them, The kingdom of heauen is like vnsto a sower, which a woman taketh and hideth in three pecks of meale, till all be leauened. All these things spake Iesus vnsto the multitude in parables, and without parables spake he not to them, That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, and will vtter the things which haue beene kept secrete from the foundation of the worlde. Then sent Iesus the multitude away, and went into the house. And his disciples came vnsto him, saying, Declare vnsto vs the parable of the tares of that fielde. Then answered he, and saide to them, He that soweth the good seede, is the Sonne of man. And the field is the worlde, and the good seede are the children of the kingdome, and the tares are the children of that wicked one. And the enemie that soweth them, is the deuill, and the haruest is the end of the worlde, and the reapers be the Angels. As then the tares are gathered and burned in ye fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. The Sonne of man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie, And shall cast them into a fornace of fire. There shalbe wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the iust men shine as ye sunne in the kingdome of their Father. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare. Againe, the kingdom of heauen is like vnsto a treasure hid in ye field, which when a man hath found, he hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth and sell eth all that he hath, and buieth that field. Againe, the kingdom of heauen is like vnsto a drawe net cast into the sea, that gathereth of all kindes of things. Which, when it is full, men draw to lande, and sit and gather the good into vessels, and cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world. The Angels shall goe foorth, and seuer the bad from among the iust, And shall cast them into a fornace of fire: there shalbe wailing, and gnashing of teeth. Iesus saide vnsto them, Understand yee all these things? They saide vnsto him, Yea, Lord. Then sayd hee vnsto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnsto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnsto an householder, which bringeth foorth out of his treasure things both newe and olde. And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, he departed thence, And came into his owne countrey, and taught them in their Synagogue, so that they were astonied, and saide, Whence commeth this wisdom and great woorkes vnsto this man? Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Marie, and his brethren James and Ioses, and Simon and Iudas? And are not his sisters
the multitude depart, that they may 
go into the townes, and bye them 
vitailes. 16 But Iesus saide to them, 
They haue no neede to goe away: 
giue yee them to eate. 17 Then saide 
they vnto him, Wee haue here but 
fiue loaues, and two fishes. 18 And 
he saide, Bring them hither to me. 
19 And hee commanded the multitude 
to sit downe on the grasse, and tooke 
the fiue loaues and the two fishes, 
and looked vp to heauen and blessed, 
and brake, and gaue the loaues to 
his disciples, and the disciples to the 
multitude. 20 And they did all eate, 
and were sufficed, and they tooke 
vp of the fragments that remained, 
twelue baskets full. 21 And they that 
had eaten, were about fiue thousande 
men, beside women and little chil-

dren. 22 And straightway Iesus com-
pelled his disciples to enter into a 
shippe, and to goe ouer before him, 
while he sent the multitude away. 
23 And assoone as hee had sent the 
multitude away, he went vp into a 
moutaine alone to pray: and when 
the euening was come, hee was there 
alone. 24 And the shippe was nowe in 
the middes of the sea, and was tossed 
with waues: for it was a contrarie 
winde. 25 And in the fourth watch 
of the night, Iesus went vnto them, 
walking on the sea. 26 And when 
his disciples sawe him walking on the 
sea, they were troubled, saying, It 
is a spirit, and cried out for feare. 
27 But straight way Iesus spake vnto 
them, saying, Be of good comfort, It 
is I: be not afraide. 28 Then Peter 
answered him, and saide, Master, if 
it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on 
the water. 29 And he saide, Come. And 
when Peter was come downe out of the 
shippe, he walked on the water, 
to goe to Iesus. 30 But when he sawe 
a mightie winde, he was afraide: and 
as he began to sinke, he cried, saying, 
Master, saue me. 31 So immediatly 
Iesus stretched forth his hande, and 
cought him, and saide to him, O thou 
of little faith, wherefore diddest thou 
doubt? 32 And assoone as they were
come into the ship, the winde ceased. 33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God. 34 And when they were come ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret. 35 And when the men of that place knewe him, they sent out into all that countrey rounde about, and brought vnto him all that were sicke, 36 And besought him, that they might touch the hemme of his gar- ment onely: and as many as touched it, were made whole.

15

1 Then came to Iesus the Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying, 2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eate bread. 3 But he answered and said vnto them, Why doe yee also transgresse the commandement of God by your tradition? 4 For God hath commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to father or mother, By the gift that is offered by me, thou maiest haue profite, 6 Though hee honour not his father, or his mother, shalbe free: thus haue ye made the commandement of God of no authoritie by your tradition. 7 O hypocrites, Esaias prophesied well of you, saying, 8 This people draweth neere vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with the lips, but their heart is farre off from me. 9 But in vaine they worship me, teaching for doctrines, mens precepts. 10 Then hee called the multitude vnto him, and said to them, Heare and vnderstand. 11 That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man. 12 Then came his disciples, and saide vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharises are offended in hearing this saying?

13 But hee answered and saide, Every plant which mine heauenly Father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp. 14 Let them alone, they be the blinde leaders of the blinde: and if the blinde leade ye blinde, both shall fall into the ditche. 15 Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare vnto vs this parable. 16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding? 17 Perceiue ye not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into the mouth, goeth into the bellie, and is cast out into the draught? 18 But those thinges which proccede out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the man. 19 For out of the heart come euil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false testimonies, slaunders. 20 These are the things, which defile the man: but to eat with vnwashen hands, defileth not ye man. 21 And Iesus went thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon. 22 And beholde, a woman a Cananite came out of the same coasts, and cried, saying vnto him, Haue mercie on me, O Lord, the sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miserably vexed with a deuil. 23 But hee answered her not a worde. Then came to him his disciples, and besought him, saying, Sende her away, for she crieth after vs. 24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. 25 Yet she came, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, helpe me. 26 And he answered, and said, It is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to whelps. 27 But she said, Truth, Lord: yet in deede the whelpes eate of the crommes, which fall from their masters table. 28 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it to thee, as thou desirest. And her daughter was made whole at that houre. 29 So Iesus went away from thence, and came neere vnto the sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine and sate downe there. 30 And great multitudes came vnto
him, hauing with them, halt, blinde, dumme, maymed, and many other, and cast them downe at Iesus feete, and he healed them. 

In so much that the multitude wondered, to see the dumme speake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel. 

Then Iesus called his disciples vnso to him, and said, I haue compassion on this multitude, because they have continued with mee already three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I wil not let them depart fasting, least they faint in the way. 

And his disciples saide vnso to him, Whence should we get so much bread in the wildernes, as should suffice so great a multitude!

And Iesus said vnso to them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said, Seuen, and a fewe little fishes. 

Then he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the ground, And tooke the seuen loaues, and the fishes, and gaued thankes, and brake them, and gaued to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. And they did all eate, and were sufficed: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, seuen baskets full. 

And they that had eaten, were foure thousand men, beside women, and little children. Then Iesus sent away the multitude, and tooke ship, and came into the partes of Magdala.

1 Then came the Pharises and Sadducess, and did tempt him, desiring him to shew them a signe from heauen. 

But he answered, and said vnso to them, When it is euening, ye say, Faire wether: for ye skie is red. 

And in the morning ye say, To day shall be a tempest: for the skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, and can ye not discerne the signes of the times? 

The wicked generation, and adulterous seeketh a signe, but there shall no signe be giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet Ionas: so hee left them, and departed. 

And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread with them. 

Then Iesus said vnso to them, Take heede and beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadducess. 

And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we haue brought no bread. 

But Iesus knowing it, saiide vnso to them, O ye of little faith, why reason you thus among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread? 

Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues, when there were fiue thousand men, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? 

Neither the seuen loaues when there were foure thousand men, and howe many baskets tooke ye vp? 

Why perceiue ye not that I said not vnso to you concerning bread, that ye shoulde beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadducesses?

Then vnderstood they that he had not said that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises, and Sadducesses. 

Nowe when Iesus came into the coastes of Cesarea Philippi, hee asked his disciples, saying, Whome doe men say that I, the sonne of man am? 

And they said, Some say, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets. He said vnso to them, But whome say ye that I am? 

Then Simon Peter answered, and said, Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God. 

And Iesus answered, and saiide to him, Blessed are thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reueiled it vnso thee, but my Father which is in heauen. 

And I say also vnso thee, that thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will builde my Church: and ye gates of hell shall not overcome it. 

And I will giue vnso thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen, and whatasoever thou shalt bind vpon earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and whatasoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. 

Then hee charged his
disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus that Christ. 21 From that time forth Jesus began to shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many thinges of the Elders, and of the hie Priestes, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised againe the thirde day. 22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee. 23 Then he turned backe, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto me, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men. 24 Jesus then saide to his disciples, If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe: and take vp his crosse, and follow me. 25 For whosoever will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, shall finde it. 26 For what shall it profit a man though he should winne the whole worlde, if hee lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompence of his soule? 27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and then shall he giue to every man according to his deeds. 28 Verely I say vnto you, there bee some of them that stande here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome.

Matthew 16:21

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloude shadowed them: and beholde, there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying, This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him. 6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraide. 7 Then Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraide. 8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Jesus onely. 9 And as they came downe from the moutaine, Jesus charged them, saying, Shewe the vision to no man, vntil the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead. 10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come? 11 And Jesus answered, and said vnto them, Certeinely Elias must first come, and restore all thinges. 12 But I say vnto you that Elias is come alreadie, and they knewe him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would: likewise shall also the Sonne of man suffer of them. 13 Then the disciples percieued that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist. 14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certaine man, and fell downe at his feete, 15 And said, Master, haue pitie on my sonne: for he is lunatike, and is sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water. 16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not heale him. 17 Then Jesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse, and crooked, how long nowe shall I be with you! howe long nowe shall I suffer you! bring him hither to me. 18 And Jesus rebuked the deuill, and he went out of him: and the childe was healed at that hour. 19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? 20 And Jesus said vnto them, Because of your vnbelief: for verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith as much as is a graine of mustarde seede, ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and it shall remoue:
and nothing shalbe vnpossible vnto you. 21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting. 22 And they being in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be deliuered into the handes of men, 23 And they shall kill him, but the thirde day shall he rise againe: and they were very sore. 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued poole money, came to Peter, and sayd, Doeth not your Master pay poole money? 25 He sayd, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whome doe the Kings of the earth take tribute, or poole money? of their children, or of strangers? 26 Peter sayd vnto him, Of strangers. Then said Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free. 27 Neuerthelesse, lest we should offend them: goe to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fish that commeth vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and glue it vnfo them for me and thee.

18 1 The same time the disciples came vnfo Iesus, saying, Who is the great-est in the kingdome of heauen? 2 And Iesus called a little childe vnfo him, and set him in the mids of them, 3 And sayd, Verely I say vnfo you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen. 4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is the great-est in the kingdome of heauen. 5 And whosoever shall receiue one such little childe in my name, receiuethe me. 6 But whosoever shall offend one of these little ones which beleue in me, it were better for him, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Wo be vnfo the world be-cause of offences: for it must needes be that offences shall come, but wo be to that man by whome the offence commeth. 8 Wherefore, if thy hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two hands, or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire. 9 And if thine eye cause thee to offende, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into hell fire. 10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnfo you, that in heauen their Angels alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. 11 For the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost. 12 How thinke ye? If a man haue an hundreth sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doeth he not leaue ninetie and nine, and go into the mountaines, and seeke that which is gone astray? 13 And if so be that he finde it, verely I say vnfo you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray: 14 So is it not ye wil of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish. 15 Moreouer, if thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. 16 But if he heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses every worde may be con- firmed. 17 And if he refuse to heare them, tell it vnfo the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnfo thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane. 18 Verely I say vnfo you, Whatsoeuer ye bind on earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. 19 Againe, verely I say vnfo you, that if two of you shall agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shall desire, it shall be giuen them of my Father which is in heauen. 20 For where two or
thrice are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the mids of them. 21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Master, howe oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I shall forgive him? vnto seuen times?  22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, Vnto seuen times, but, Vnto seuentie times seuen times. 23 Therefore is the kingdom of heauen likened vnto a certaine King, which would take an account of his seruants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him, which ought him ten thousand talents. 25 And because he had nothing to pay, his Lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and his children, and all that he had, and the dette to be payed. 26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then that seruant Lord had compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the dette. 28 But when the seruant was departed, hee found one of his fellow seruants, which ought him an hundred pence, and he layde hands on him, and threatned him, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger towards me, and I will pay thee all. 30 Yet he would not, but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the dette. 31 And when his other fellow seruants sawe what was done, they were very sory, and came, and declared vnto their Lord all that was done. 32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and sayd to him, O euil seruant, I forgaue thee all that dette, because thou prayested me. 33 Oughtest not thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellowe seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee? 34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentours, till he should pay all that was due to him. 35 So likewise shall mine heauenly Father doe vnto you, except ye forgie from your hearts, eche one to his brother their trespasses.

19

1 And it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galile, and came into ye coasts of Iuda beyond Iordan. 2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there. 3 Then came vnto him the Pharises tempt-ing him, and saying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon every occasion? 4 And he answered and sayd vnto them, Haue ye not read, that hee which made them at the beginning, made them male and female, 5 And sayd, For this cause, shall a man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two shalbe one flesh. 6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. Let not man therefore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together. 7 They said to him, Why did then Moses command to giue a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away? 8 He sayd vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your heart, suffered you to put away your wifes: but from the beginning it was not so. 9 I say therefore vnto you, that whosoeuer shall put away his wife, except it be for whore-dome, and marry another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer marrieth her which is divorced, doeth commit adulterie. 10 Then sayd his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not good to marry. 11 But he sayd vnto them, All men cannot receive this thing, saue they to whom it is giuen. 12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of their mothers belly: and there be some eunuches, which be gelded by men: and there be some eunuches, which haue gelded them selues for the kingdom of heauen. He that is able to receive this, let him receieue it. 13 Then were brought to him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and
the disciples rebuked them. 14 But Jesus sayd, Suffer the litle children, and forbid them not to come to me: for of such is the kingdome of heauen. 15 And when he had put his hands on them, he departed thence. 16 And beholde, one came and sayd vnto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue eternall life? 17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, eue God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe ye commandements. 18 He sayd to him, Which? And Jesus sayde, These, Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse. 19 Honour thy father and mother: and thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 20 The yong man sayd vnto him, I haue observerd all these things from my youth: what lacke I yet? 21 Jesus sayd vnto him, If thou wilt be perfite, go, sell that thou hast, and giue it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, and follow me. 22 And when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions. 23 Then Jesus sayd vnto his disciples, Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen. 24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into ye kingdome of God. 25 And whe his disciples heard it, they were excedingly amased, saying, Who then can be saued? 26 And Jesus behelde them, and sayde vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible. 27 Then answered Peter, and said to him, Beholde, we haue forsaken all, and followed thee: what therefore shall we haue? 28 And Jesus said vnto them, Verely I say to you, that when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his maiestie, ye which followed me in the regeneration, shall sit also vpon twelue thrones and judge the twelue tribes of Israel. 29 And whosoeuer shall forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, he shall receive an hundred folde more, and shall inherite euery-lasting life. 30 But many that are first, shalbe last, and the last shalbe first.

20

1 For the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine, housholder, which went out at the dawning of the day to hire labourers into his vineyarde. 2 And he agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, and sent them into his vineyard. 3 And he went out about the third houre, and sawe other standing idle in the market place, 4 And sayd vnto them, Goe ye also into my vineyard, and whosoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way. 5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise. 6 And he went about the eleuenth houre, and found other standing idle, and sayd vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? 7 They sayd vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He sayd to them, Goe ye also into my vineyard, and whosoeuer is right, that shall ye receiuie. 8 And when euene was come, the master of the vineyard sayd vnto his steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning at the last, till thou come to the first. 9 And they which were hired about ye eleuenth houre, came and receiued euery man a penie. 10 Nowe when the first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they likewise receiued euery man a penie. 11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the master of the house. 12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heate of the day. 13 And hee answered one of them, saying, Friend, I doe thee
no wrong: didst thou not agree with me for a penie? 14 Take that which is thine owne, and go thy way: I will giue vnto this last, as much as to thee. 15 Is it not lawfull for me to do as I will with mine owne? Is thine eye euil, because I am good? 16 So the last shalbe first, and the first last: for many are called, but fewe chosen. 17 And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, and tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them, 18 Beholde, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall bee delivered vnto the chiefe priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death, 19 And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to scourge, and to crucifie him, but the third day he shall rise againe. 20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedeues children with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing of him. 21 And he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? She said to him, Graunt that these my two sonnes may sit, the one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome. 22 And Iesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I shalbe baptized with? They said to him, We are able. 23 And he said vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of my cup, and shall be baptized with the baptisme, that I am baptized with, but to sit at my right hande, and at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but it shalbe giuen to them for whome it is prepared of my Father. 24 And when the other ten heard this, they disdained at the two brethren. 25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him, and saide, We knowe that the lorde of the Gentiles haue domination ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie ouer them. 26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, let him be your seruant. 27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him be your seruant. 28 Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many. 29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. 30 And beholde, two blinde men, sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs. 31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should holde their peace: but they cried the more, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs. 32 Then Iesus stoode still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I should do to you? 33 They saide to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. 34 And Iesus mooved with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

21

1 And when they drewe neere to Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, then sent Iesus two disciples, 2 Saying to them, Goe into the towne that is ouer against you, and anon yee shall finde an asse bounde, and a colte with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me. 3 And if any man say ought vnto you, say ye, that the Lord hath neede of them, and straightway he will let them goe. 4 All this was done that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, 5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke and sitting vpon an asse, and a colte, the foale of an asse vsed to the yoke. 6 So the disciples went, and did as Iesus had commanded them, 7 And brought the asse and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and set him thereon. 8 And a great multitude spred their garments in the way: and other cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9 Moreouer, the people
that went before, and they also that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, Blessed be hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna thou which art in the highest heauens. 10 And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this? 11 And the people said, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

12 And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money chagers, and the seates of them that sold doues, 13 And said to them, it is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a denne of theeues. 14 Then the blinde, and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he healed them. 15 But when the chiefe priestes and Scribes sawe the maruellous that hee did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdained, 16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea: read ye neuer, By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou haist made perfite the praise? 17 So hee left them, and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there. 18 And in the morning, as he returned into the citie, he was hungrie, 19 And seeing a figge tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaues onely, and said to it, Neuer fruite grow on thee henceforwards. And anon the figge tree withered. 20 And when his discipules saw it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figge tree withered! 21 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only doe that, which I haue done to the figge tree, but also if ye say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and cast thy selfe into the sea, it shalbe done. 

22 And whatsoeuer ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleue, ye shall receiue it. 23 And whe he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priestes, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie? 24 Then Iesus answered and said vnto them, I also will aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things. 25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleue him? 26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, for all holde Iohn as a Prophet. 27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We can not tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things. 28 But what thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and saide, Sonne, goe and worke to day in my vineyarde. 29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went. 30 Then came he to the second, and said likewise. And he answered, and said, I will, Syr: yet he went not. 31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the father? They saide vnto him, The first. Iesus saide vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God. 32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righ- teousnes, and yee beleued him not: but the Publicanes, and the harlots beleued him, and ye, though ye sawe it, were not moued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleue him. 33 Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and made a winepresse therein, and built a tower, and let it out to hus- bandmen, and went into a strange countrey. 34 And when the time of the fruitie drewe neere, hee sent his seruants to the husbandmen to
which other not toooke him, perceiued it whosoeuer foorth giuen shalbe say This stone seasons. yard him, husbandmen? shall and ye receiue the let the man of seruantes them wayes, and therefore, theghestes. and wayes, the laye sharpely, So oxen how but a bad: out there when to one King sent and murther-they will and vnto Hee 42 Scriptures, 15 he vineyarde is kingdome This disci-And and the the the not the many King another. he it tooke thereof. are had will and the seruants, doing, to him They chosen. husbandmen, into the gnashing let their hee maried in my cruelly into Herodians, tempt as which 9 how 8 sus- of is the thou? in killed the 44 all seruants, vnto their slewe sayd, him good not 39 his art 41 Mas-sent them, sent Friend, his his warriers, and destroyed those murth-ers, and burnt vp their citie. 8 Then saide hee to his seruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthy. 9 Go ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as many as ye finde, bid them to the mariage. 10 So those seruantes went out into the hie wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with ghestes. 11 Then the King came in, to see the ghestes, and sawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment. 12 And he sayd vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a wed-ding garment? And he was speach-lesse. 13 Then sayd the King to the seruants, Binde him hand and foote: take him away, and cast him into vtter darkenes: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14 For many are called, but fewe chosen. 15 Then went the Pharises and tooke counsell how they might tangle him in talke. 16 And they sent vnto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we knowe that thou art true, and teatchest the way of God truly, neither carest for any man: for thou con-siderest not the person of men. 17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesars, or not? 18 But Jesus perceiued their wickednes, and sayd, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? 19 Shewe me the tribute money. And they brought him a peny. 20 And he sayde vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? 21 They sayd vnto him, Cesars. Then sayd he vnto them, Giue

Matthew 21:35

Matthew 22:1

did prepare my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are readie: come vnto the mariage. 5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his marchandise. 6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them sharply, and slewe them. 7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and sent forth his war-riers, and destroyed those murth-ers, and burnt vp their citie. 8 Then saide hee to his seruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthy. 9 Go ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as many as ye finde, bid them to the mariage. 10 So those seruantes went out into the hie wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with ghestes. 11 Then the King came in, to see the ghestes, and sawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment. 12 And he sayd vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a wedding garment? And he was speach-lesse. 13 Then sayd the King to the seruants, Binde him hand and foote: take him away, and cast him into vtter darkenes: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14 For many are called, but fewe chosen. 15 Then went the Pharises and tooke counsell how they might tangle him in talke. 16 And they sent vnto him their disci-ples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we knowe that thou art true, and teatchest the way of God truly, nei-ther carest for any man: for thou con-siderest not the person of men. 17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesars, or not? 18 But Jesus perceiued their wickednes, and sayd, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? 19 Shewe me the tribute money. And they brought him a peny. 20 And he sayde vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? 21 They sayd vnto him, Cesars. Then sayd he vnto them, Giue
therefore to Cesar, the things which
are Cesar's, and gie vn to God, those
things which are Gods. 22 And when
they heard it, they marueiled, and left
him, and went their way. 23 The same
day the Sadduces came to him (which
say that there is no resurrection) and
asked him, 24 Saying, Master, Moses
sayd, If a man die, hauing no chil-
dren, his brother shall marie his wife
by the right of alliance, and raise
vp seede vn to his brother. 25 Nowe
there were with vs seuen brethren,
and the first maried a wife, and de-
ceased: and hauing none yssue, left
his wife vn to his brother. 26 Likewise
also the second, and the third, vn to
the seuenth. 27 And last of all the
woman died also. 28 Therefore in
the resurrection, whose wife shall she
be of the seuen? for all had her.
29 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vn
to them, Ye are deceuied, not knowing
the Scriptures, nor the power of God.
30 For in the resurrection they neither
marie wiues, nor wiues are bestowed
in mariage, but are as the Angels of
God in heauen. 31 And concerning
the resurrection of the dead, haue
ye not read what is spoken vnto you
of God, saying, 32 I am the God of
Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and
the God of Iacob? God is not the God
of the dead, but of the liuing. 33 And
when the multitude heard it, they
were astonied at his doctrine. 34 But
when the Pharises had heard, that he
had put the Sadduces to silence, they
assembled together. 35 And one of
them, which was an expounder of the
Lawe, asked him a question, tempting
him, and saying, 36 Master, which is
ye great commandement in the Lawe?
37 Iesus sayd to him, Thou shalt loue
the Lord thy God with all thine heart,
with all thy soule, and with all thy
minde. 38 This is the first and the
great commandement. 39 And the
second is like vn to this, Thou shalt
loue thy neighbour as thy selve. 40 On
these two commandements hangeth
the whole Lawe, and the Prophets.

41 While the Pharises were gathered
together, Iesus asked them, 42 Saying,
What thinke ye of Christ? whose
sonne is he? They sayd vn to him,
Dauids. 43 He sayd vn to them, How
then doeth Daud in spirit call him
Lord, saying, 44 The Lord sayd to my
Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make
thine enemies thy footestoole? 45 If
then Daud call him Lord, howe is he
his sonne? 46 And none could answere
him a worde, neither durst any from
that day foorth ask him any moe
questions.

23

1 Then spake Iesus to the multi-
tude, and to his disciples, 2 Saying,
The Scribes and the Pharises sit in
Moses seate. 3 All therefore what-
ssoever they bid you obserue, that ob-
serue and doe: but after their workes
doe not: for they say, and doe not.
4 For they binde heaueie burdens, and
grieuous to be borne, and lay them on
mens shoulders, but they themselues
will not moue them with one of their
fingers. 5 All their workes they doe
for to be seene of men: for they make
their phylacteries broad, and make
long the fringes of their garments,
6 And loue the chiefe place at feastes,
and to haue the chiefe seates in the
assemblies, 7 And greetings in the
markets, and to be called of men,
Rabbi, Rabbi. 8 But be not ye called,
Rabbi: for one is your doctour, to
wit, Christ, and all ye are brethren.
9 And call no man your father vpon
the earth: for there is but one, your
father which is in heauen. 10 Be
not called doctors: for one is your
doctor, euen Christ. 11 But he that
is greatest among you, let him be
your seruant. 12 For whosoeuer will
exalt himselfe, shall be brought lowe:
and whosoeuer will humle himselfe,
shalbe exalted. 13 Wo therefore be
vn to you, Scribes and Pharises, hyp-
ocrites, because ye shut vp the King-
dome of heauen before men: for ye
your selues go not in, neither suffer
ye them that would enter, to come in. 14 Wo be vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation. 15 Wo be vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compass sea and land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, ye make him two folde more the childe of hell, then you your selues. 16 Wo be vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoever sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the golde of the Temple, he offendeth. 17 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that sanctifieth the golde? 18 And whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the offering that is vpon it, offendeth. 19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth the offering? 20 Whosoever therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. 21 And whosoever sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. 22 And he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. 23 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye tithe the mynt, and annyne, and cummyn, and leaue the weightier matters of the law, as judgement, and mercy and fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other. 24 Ye blinde guides, which straine out a gnat, and swallowe a camell. 25 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vttre side of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are ful of briberie and excesse. 26 Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse first the inside of the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also. 27 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombe, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and all filthines. 28 So are ye also: for outwarde ye appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie. 29 Wo be vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye build the tombe of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, 30 And say, If we had bene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue bene partners with them in the blood of the Prophets. 31 So then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that murthered the Prophets. 32 Fulfill ye also ye measure of your fathers. 33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, howe should ye escape the damnation of hell! 34 Wherefore beholde, I send vnto you Prophets, and wise men, and Scribes, and of them ye shall kill and crucifie: and of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from citie to citie, 35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood that was shed vpon the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, whome ye slewe betweene the Temple and the altar. 36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon this generation. 37 Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chickins vnder her wings, and ye would not! 38 Beholde, your habitation shalbe left vnto you desolate, 39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see mee henceforth till that ye say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

1 And Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his discipes came to him, to shewe him the building of the Temple. 2 And Iesus sayd vnto them, See ye not all
these things? Verely I say vnto you, there shall not be here left a stone upon a stone, that shall not be cast downe. 3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olives, his disciples came vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shall be, and what signe shalbe of thy comming, and of the ende of the world. 4 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you. 5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many. 6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realme against realme, and there shalbe famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places. 8 All these are but ye beginning of sorowes. 9 Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake. 10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. 11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceiue many. 12 And because iniquitie shalbe increased, the loue of many shalbe colde. 13 But he that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued. 14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shalbe preached through the whole world for a witnes vnto all nations, and then shall the end come. 15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place (let him that readeth consider it.) 16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines. 17 Let him which is on the house top, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house. 18 And he that is in the fielde, let not him returne backe to fetch his clothes. 19 And woe shalbe to them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes. 20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day. 21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the worlde to this time, nor shalbe. 22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake those dayes shalbe shortened. 23 Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there, beleue it not. 24 For there shall arise false Christes, and false prophets, and shall shewe great signes and wonders, so that if it were possible, they should deceiue the very elect. 25 Beholde, I haue tolde you before. 26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Beholde, he is in the desert, goe not forth: Beholde, he is in the secret places, beleue it not. 27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, and is seene into the West, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be. 28 For wheresoeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the Egles be gathered together. 29 And immediately after ye tribulations of those dayes, shall the sunne be darkened, and the moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and ye powers of heauue shalbe shake. 30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the kinreds of the earth mourne, and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the clouds of heauen with power and great glorie. 31 And he shall send his Angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect, from the foure windes, and from the one ende of the heauens vnto the other. 32 Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender, and it putteth forth leaues, ye knowe that sommer is neere. 33 So likewise ye, when ye see all these things, know that the kingdom of God is neere, eue at ye doores. 34 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done. 35 Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my wordes shall not passe away. 36 But
of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels of heauen, but my father only. 37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so likewise shall the comming of the Sonne of man be. 38 For as in the dayes before the flood, they did eate and drinke, marrie, and giue in mariage, vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke, 39 And knewe nothing, till the flood came, and tooke them all away, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be. 40 Then two shall be in the fieldes, the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused. 41 Two women shalbe grinding at ye mill: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused. 42 Watch therefore: for ye knowe not what houre your master will come. 43 Of this be sure, that if the good man of the house knewe at what watch the thiefe would come, he woulde surely watch, and not suffer his house to be digged through. 44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the houre that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of man come. 45 Who then is a faithfull seruaunt and wise, whom his master hath made ruer ouer his household, to giue them meate in season? 46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he commeth, shall finde so doing. 47 Verely I say vnto you, he shall make him ruer ouer all his goods. 48 But if that euel seruant shall say in his heart, My master doth deferre his comming, 49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken, 50 That seruaunts master will come in a day, when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of; 51 And will cut him off, and giue him his portion with hypocrites: there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

25

1 Then the kingdome of heauen shalbe likened vnto tenne virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meete the bridegrome. 2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue foolish. 3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle with them. 4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes. 5 Nowe while the bridegome taried long, all slumberd and slept. 6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegome commeth: goe out to meete him. 7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes. 8 And the foolish said to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there will not be ynowh for vs and you: but goe ye rather to them that sell, and bye for your selues. 10 And while they went to bye, the bridegome came: and they that were readie, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was shut. 11 Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs. 12 But he answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, I knowe you not. 13 Watch therefore: for ye knowe neither the day, nor the houre, when the sonne of man will come. 14 For the kingdome of heauen is as a man that going into a strange countrey, called his seruaunts, and deliuered to them his goods. 15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, and to an other two, and to another one, to euery man after his own ability, and straightway went from home. 16 Then he that had receiued the fiue talents, went and occupied with them, and gained other fiue talents. 17 Likewise also, he that receiued two, he also gained other two. 18 But he that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hid his masters money. 19 But after a long season, the master of those seruaunts came, and reckoned with them. 20 Then came he that had receiued fiue talents, and brought other fiue talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents: behold, I haue gained with them other fiue talents. 21 Then his master saide vnto him, It is well done good seruant and faithfull, Thou
hast bene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler over such: enter into thy masters joy. 22 Also he that had received two talents, came, and said, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents more. 23 His master saide vnto him, It is well done good servant, and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler over such: enter into thy masters joy. 24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and said, Master, I knewe that thou wast an hard man, which receauest where thou sowedest not, and gatherest where thou sowedest not: 25 I was therefore afraid, and went, and hid thy talent in the earth: behold, thou hast thine owne. 26 And his master answered, and said vnto him, Thou euill servant, and slouthefull, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I straowed not. 27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to ye exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued mine owne with vantage. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath tenn talents. 29 For vnto euery man that hath, it shall be giuen, and he shall haue abundance, and from him that hath not, euene that he hath, shalbe taken away. 30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable servant into vitter darkenes: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. 31 And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shaue he sit uppon the throne of his glorie, 32 And before him shalbe gathered all nations, and he shall separe them one from another, as a shepheard separateth the sheepe from ye goates. 33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, and the goates on the left. 34 Then shall ye king say to them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my father: take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world. 35 For I was an hungred, and ye giue me meate: I thirsted, and ye giue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye receiued me. 36 I was naked, and ye clothed me: I was sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me. 37 Then shaue the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when sawe we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or a thirst, and gaue thee drinke? 38 And when sawe we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee? 39 Or when sawe we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee? 40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethre, ye haue done it to me. 41 Then shall he say vnto them on ye left hand, Depart from me ye cursed, into euerlasting fire, which is prepared for the deuill and his angels. 42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me no drinke: 43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not in vnto you: I was naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not. 44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord, when sawe we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee? 45 Then shall he answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. 46 And these shall goe into euerlasting paine, and the righteous into life euerall.

26

1 And it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he saide vnto his disciples, 2 Ye know that after two dayes is ye Passeouer, and the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered to be crucified. 3 Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders of ye people into the hall of the high Priest called Caiaphas: 4 And consulted together that they might take Iesus by
subtiltie, and kill him. 5 But they sayd, Not on the feast day, least any vprore be among the people. 6 And when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon the leper, 7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very costly oynment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at the table. 8 And when his disciples sawe it, they had indignation, saying, What needed this waste? 9 For this oynment might haue bene solde for much, and bene giuen to the poore. 10 And Iesus knowing it, sayde vnto them, Why trouble yee the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke vpon me. 11 For yee haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shall yee not haue alwayes. 12 For in that shee powred this oynment on my bodie, shee did it to burie me. 13 Verely I say vnto you, whoresoeuer this Gospel shall bee preached throughout all the worlde, there shall also this that shee hath done, be spoken of for a memoriall of her. 14 Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priestes, 15 And said, What will ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they appoynted vnto him thirtie pieces of siluer. 16 And from that time, he sought opportunitie to betraie him. 17 Nowe on the first day of the feast of vnleauened bread the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer? 18 And he said, Goe yee into the citie to such a man, and say to him, The master saith, My time is at hande: I will keepe the Passeouer at thine house with my disciples. 19 And the disciples did as Iesus had giuen them charge, and made readie the Passeouer. 20 So when the Euen was come, hee sate downe with the twelue. 21 And as they did eate, he sayde, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betraie me. 22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began euery one of them to say vnto him, Is it I, Master? 23 And hee answered and sayde, Hee that dip-

Matthew 26:5 31  Matthew 26:38

peth his hande with me in the dish, hee shall betraie me. 24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: but woe be to that man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if hee had neuer bene borne. 25 Then Iudas which betraied him, answered and sayde, Is it I, Master? He sayde vnto him, Thou hast sayd it. 26 And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, and gaue it to the disciples, and sayd, Take, eate: this is my bodie. 27 Also he tooke the cuppe, and when he had giuen thanks, he gaue it them, saying, Drinke ye all of it. 28 For this is my blood of the Newe Testament, that is shedde for many, for the remission of sinnes. 29 I say vnto you, that I will not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the vine vntil that day, when I shall drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome. 30 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out into the mount of Oliues. 31 Then saide Iesus vnto them, All yee shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I wil smite the shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered. 32 But after I am risen againe, I will go before you into Galile. 33 But Peter answered, and sayde vnto him, Though that al men should be offended by thee, yet will I neuer be offended. 34 Iesus sayde vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrishe. 35 Peter saide vnto him, Though I should die with thee, I will in no case denie thee. Likewise also sayd all the disciples. 36 Then went Iesus with them into a place which is called Gethsemane, and said vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I goe, and pray yonder. 37 And hee tooke vnto him Peter, and the two sonsnes of Zebedeus, and began to waxe sorowfull, and grievously troubled. 38 Then sayde Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauie, euen vnto the death: take yee here, and watch with me.
39 So hee went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou wilt. 40 After, hee came vnto the disciples, and founde them a sleepe, and sayde to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre? 41 Watch, and praie, that yee enter not into tentation: the spirt in deede is readie, but the fleshe is weake. 42 Againe he went away the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cuppe can not passe away from mee, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done. 43 And he came, and founde them a sleepe againe, for their eyes were heauie. 44 So he left them and went away againe, and praied the third time, saying the same worordes. 45 Then came he to his disciples, and said vnto them, Sleeepe henceforth, and take your rest: behold, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sinners. 46 Rise, let vs goe: beholde, hee is at hande that betraied me. 47 And while hee yet spake, loe Iudas, one of the twelue, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues, from the high Priests and Elders of the people. 48 Now he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomesoever I shall kisse, that is he, laie holde on him. 49 And forthwith he came to Iesus, and sayd, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him. 50 Then Iesus sayde vnto him, Frieende, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laide hands on Iesus, and tooke him. 51 And beholde, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand, and drewe his sworde, and strooke a seruant of the high Priest, and smote off his eare. 52 Then sayde Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sworde into his place: for all that take the sworde, shall perish with the sworde. 53 Either thinkest thou, that I can not now pray to my Father, and he will gue me moe then twelue legions of Angels? 54 Howe then shoule the Scriptures bee fulfilled, which say, that it must be so? 55 The same houre sayde Iesus to the multitude, Ye be come out as it were against a thiefe, with swordes and staues to take mee: I sate daily teaching in the Temple among you, and yee tooke me not. 56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsooke him, and fled. 57 And they tooke Iesus, and led him to Caiaphas the hie Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled. 58 And Peter followed him a farre off vnto the hie Priestes hall, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the ende. 59 Nowe the chiefe Priestes and the Elders, and all the whole counciull sought false witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death. 60 But they founde none, and though many false witnesses came, yet founde they none: but at the last came two false witnesses, 61 And saide, This man saide, I can destroie the Temple of God, and build it in three daies. 62 Then the chiefe Priest arose, and sayde to him, Answerest thou nothing? What is the matter that these men witnesse against thee? 63 But Iesus helde his peace. Then the chiefe Priest answered, and saide to him, I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the liuing God, to tell vs, If thou be that Christ the Sonne of God, or no. 64 Iesus saide to him, Thou hast saide it: neuerthelasse I say vnto you, hereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man, sitting at the right hande of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of the heaven. 65 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, Hee hath blasphemed, what haue wee any more neede of witnesses? beholde: nowe yee haue heard his blasphemie. 66 What thinke yee? They answered, and said, He is guiltie of death. 67 Then spet they in his face, and buffeted him, and other smote him with roddes, 68 Saying, Prophesie to vs, O Christ, Who is he that smote thee? 69 Peter sate without in the hall, and a maide came to him, saying,
Thou also wast with Iesus of Galile: 
70 But hee denied before them all, 
saying, I wote not what thou saiest. 
71 And when hee went out into the 
porche, another maide sawe him, and 
sayed vnto them that were there, This 
man was also with Iesus of Nazareth. 
72 And againe he denied with an othe, 
saying, I knowe not the man. 73 So 
after a while, came vnto him they 
that stode by, and said ye vnto Peter, 
Surely thou art also one of them: 
for euen thy speache bewraie eth thee. 
74 Then began hee to curse himselfe, 
and to swear, saying, I knowe not 
the man. And immediately the cocke 
crewre. 75 Then Peter remembred the 
wordes of Iesus, which had sayde vnto 
him, Before the cocke crowe thou 
shalt denye me thrise. So he went out, 
and wept bitterly.

27

1 When the morning was come, 
all the chiefe Priests, and the elders 
of the people tooke counsell against 
Iesus, to put him to death, 2 And led 
him away bounde, and deliuered him 
vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour. 
3 Then when Iudas which betrayed 
him, sawe that hee was condemned, 
hee repented himselfe, and brought 
againe the thirtie pieces of siluer 
to the chiefe Priests, and Elders, 
4 Saying, I haue sinned, betraying the 
innoent bloud. But they sayde, What 
is that to vs? see thou to it. 5 And 
when hee had cast downe the siluer 
pieces in the Temple, hee departed, 
and went, and hanged himselfe. 6 And 
the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer 
pieces, and sayde, It is not lawfull 
for vs to put them into the treasure, 
because it is the price of bloud. 7 And 
they tooke counsell, and bought with 
them a potters fiedle, for the buri-
all of strangers. 8 Wherefore that 
field is called, The field of bloud, vnt-
till this day. 9 (Then was fulfilled 
that which was spoken by Ieremias 
the Prophet, saying, And they tooke 
thirtie siluer pieces, ye price of him 
that was valued, whom they of ye 
children of Israel valued. 10 And 
they gaue them for the potters fiedle, 
as the Lord appointed me.) 11 And 
Iesus stood before ye gouernour, and 
the gouernour asked him, saying, Art 
thou that King of the Iewes? Iesus 
said vnto him, Thou sayest it. 12 And 
when he was accused of the chiefe 
Priestes, and Elders, he answered 
nothing. 13 Then saide Pilate vnto 
him, Hearest thou not howe many 
things they lay against thee? 14 But he 
answered him not to one worde, in so 
much that the gouernour marued 
greatly. 15 Nowe at the feast, the 
gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto 
the people a prisoner whom they 
would. 16 And they had then a notable 
prisoner, called Barabbas. 17 When 
they were then gathered together, 
Pilate said vnto the, Whether will ye 
that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or 
Iesus which is called Christ? 18 (For 
he knewe well, that for enuie they 
thad deliuered him. 19 Also when he 
was set downe vpon the judgement 
seate, his wife sent to him, saying, 
Haue thou nothing to do with that 
just man: for I haue suffered many 
things this day in a dreame by reason 
of him.) 20 But the chiefe Priestes and 
the Elders had persuaded the people 
that they shoulde aske Barabbas, and 
should destroy Iesus. 21 Then the 
gouernour answered, and said vnto 
them, Whether of the twaine will ye 
that I let loose vnto you? And they 
said, Barabbas. 22 Pilate said vnto 
them, What shall I do then with Iesus, 
which is called Christ? They all said 
to him, Let him be crucified. 23 Then 
said the gouernour, But what euill 
hath he done? Then they cryed the 
more, saying, Let him be crucified. 
24 When Pilate saw that he aaualled 
nothing, but that more tumult was 
made, he tooke water and washed his 
hands before the multitude, saying, 
I am innocent of the blood of this 
just man: looke you to it. 25 Then 
answered all the people, and saide, 
His bloud be on vs, and on our chil-
dren. 26 Thus let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliered him to be crucified. 27 Then the sooldiers of the governour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole band, 28 And they striped him, and put about him a skarlet robe, 29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, and a reede in his right hand, and bowed their knees before him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee King of the Iewes, 30 And spitted vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote him on the head. 31 Thus when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne rayment on him, and led him away to crucifie him. 32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to beare his crosse. 33 And when they came vnto the place called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place of dead mens skulles) 34 They gaued him vineer to drinke, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke. 35 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, and did cast lottes, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, They deuided my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lottes. 36 And they sate, and watched him there. 37 They set vp also ouer his head his cause written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEVVES. 38 And there were two theeues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left. 39 And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads, 40 And saying, Thou that destroyest ye Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: if thou be ye Sonne of God, come downe from ye crosse. 41 Likewise also the ie Priests mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharises, said, 42 He saued others, but he cannot saue him selfe: if he be ye King of Israel, let him now come downe from ye crosse, and we will beleeue in him. 43 He trusted in God, let him deliuer him nowe, if he will haue him: for he saide, I am the Sonne of God. 44 The selfe same thing also ye theeues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth. 45 Now from ye sixt houre was there darkenesse ouer all the land, vnto the ninth houre. 46 And about ye ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? 47 And some of them that stooed there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elias. 48 And straightway one of them ran, and tooke a spondge, and filled it with vineer, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke. 49 Other said, Let be: let vs see, if Elias wil come and saue him. 50 Then Iesus cryed againe with a loude voyce, and yeelded vp the ghost. 51 And behold, the vayle of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the stones were cloue. 52 And the graues did open themselues, and many bodies of the Saintes, which slept, arose, 53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared vnto many. 54 When the Centurion, and they that were with him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Sonne of God. 55 And many women were there, beholding him a farre off, which had folowed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him. 56 Among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus sonnes. 57 And when the euen was come, there came a riche man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who had also himselfe bene Iesus disciple. 58 He went to Pilate, and asked ye body of Iesus. Then Pilate commanded ye body to be deliuered. 59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth, 60 And put it in his new tombe, which
he had hewn out in a rocke, and rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. 61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie sitting ouer against the sepulchre. 62 Nowe the next day that followed the Preparation of the Sabbath, the hie Priestes and Pharises assembled to Pilate, 63 And said, Syr, we remember that that deceiuer saide, while he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I will rise. 64 Command therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure vntill the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so shall the last errour be worse then the first. 65 Then Pilate saide vnto them, Ye haue a watch: goe, and make it sure as ye knowe. 66 And they went, and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone.

28

1 Now in the end of the Sabbath, when the first day of ye weeke began to dawne, Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to see the sepulchre, 2 And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it. 3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snowe. 4 And for feare of him, the keepers were astonied, and became as dead men. 5 But the Angel answered, and said to the women, Feare ye not: for I know that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified: 6 He is not here, for he is risen; as he saide: come, see the place where the Lord was laid, 7 And go quickly, and tel his disciples that he is risen from ye dead: and behold, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye shall see him: Ioe, I haue told you. 8 So they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioye, and did runne to bring his disciples worde. 9 And as they wet to tel his disciples, behold, Iesus also met the, saying, God saue you. And they came, and tooke him by the feete, and worshipped him. 10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraide. Goe, and tell my brethren, that they goe into Galile, and there shall they see me. 11 Nowe when they were gone, beholde, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie Priestes all ye things that were done. 12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and tooke counsell, and gaue large money vnto the soldiers, 13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this matter come before the gouernour to be heard, we will perswade him, and so vse the matter that you shall not neede to care. 15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is noysed among the Iewes vnto this day. 16 Then ye eleuen disciples wet into Galile, into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed the. 17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some douted. 18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, All power is giuen vnto me, in heauen, and in earth. 19 Go therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, 20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoever I haue commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, vntill the ende of the worlde, Amen.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK

1 The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God: 2 As it is written in the Prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 3 The voice of him that crieth in the wildernes is, Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.

4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of amendment of life, for remission of sins. 5 And al ye countrey of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuier Iordan, confessing their sinnes. 6 Nowe John was clothed with camels heare, and with a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: and he did eate Locusts and wilde hony, 7 And preached, saying, A stronger then I commeth after me, whose shoes latching I am not worthy to stooue downe, and vnloose. 8 Trueth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but he will baptize you with the holy Ghost. 9 And it came to passe in those daies, that Jesus came from Nazareth, a citie of Galile, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan. 10 And assone as he was come out of the water, Iohn saw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue. 11 Then there was a voyce from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloved Sonne, in whome I am well pleased. 12 And immediatly the Spirite driueth him into the wildernesse. 13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourtie daies, and was tempted of Satan: hee was also with the wilde beasts, and the Angells ministred vnto him. 14 Now after that Iohn was committed to prison, Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God, 15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleue the Gospel. 16 And as he walked by the sea of Galile, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, (for they were fishers.) 17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Comely me, and I will make you to be fishers of men. 18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him. 19 And when hee had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the ship, mending their nets. 20 And anon hee called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the shippe with his hired seruants, and went their way after him. 21 So they entred into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day hee entred into the Synagogue, and taught. 22 And they were astonied at his doctrine, for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes. 23 And there was in their Synagogue a man in whome was an vnclene spirite, and hee cried out. 24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to do with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe thee what thou art, euue that holy one of God. 25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him. 26 And the vnclene spirite tare him, and cried with a loud voyce, and came out of him. 27 And they were all amased, so that they demaunded one of another, saying, What thing is this? what newe doctrine is this? for he commandeth euene the foule spirites with authoritie, and they obey him. 28 And immediatly his fame spred abroadre throughout all the region bordering on Galile. 29 And assoone as they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Symon and Andrew, with Iames and Iohn. 30 And Symons wiuies mother lay sicke of a feuer, and anon they told him of her. 31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, and the feuer forsooke her by and by, and shee ministred vnto them.
And when even was come, at what time the sunne setteth, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils. 

And the whole citie was gathered together at the doore. And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases: and he cast out many deuils, and suffred not the deuils to say that they knewe him. And in the morning very early before day, Iesus arose and went out into a solitarie place, and there praid. And Simon, and they that were with him, followed carefully after him. And when they had found him, they sayde vnto him, All men seeke for thee. 

Then he said vnto them, Let vs go into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for I came out for that purpose. And hee preached in their Synagogues, throughout all Galile, and cast the deuils out. And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeled downe vnto him, and said to him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. And Iesus had compassion, and put forth his hand, and touched him, and said to him, I wil: be thou cleane. And assone as he had spoken, immediatly ye leprosie departed from him, and he was made cleane. And after he had glie him a streight commandement, he sent him away forthwith, and sayde vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man, but get thee hence, and shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy clensing those things, which Moses commanded, for a testimoniall vnto them. But when he was departed, hee began to tel many things, and to publish the matter: so that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from euery quarter.

2

1 After a fewe dayes, hee entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noysed that he was in the house. 2 And anon, many gathered together, in so much that the places about the doore coulde not receiue any more and he preached the word vnto them. And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure men. And because they could not come neere vnto him for the multitude, they vncovered ye rooфе of the house where hee was: and when they had broken it open, they let done the bed, wherein the sicke of the palsie lay. Nowe when Iesus sawe their faith, he saide to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee. And there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why doeth this man speake such blasphemies? who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely? And immediatly when Iesus perceived in his spirite, that thus they reasoned with themselues, he sayde vnto them, Why rea-son yee these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke? But that ye may knowe, that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he sayde vnto the sicke of the palsie.) I say vnto thee, Arise and take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine owne house. And by and by he arose, and tooke vp his bed, and went forth before them all, in so much that they were all amased, and glorified God, saying, We neuer sawe such a thing. Then he went forth againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them. And as Iesus passed by, hee sawe Leui the sonne of Alpheus sit at the receit of custome, and said vnto him, Folowe me. And he arose and followed him. And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were many that followed him. And when the Scribes and Pharises sawe him
eate with the Publicanes and sinners, they sayd vnto his disciples, Howe is it, that hee eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners? 17 Now when Jesus heard it, hee sayde vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the Physiccion, but the sicke. I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance. 18 And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did fast, and came and saide vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharises fast, and thy disciples fast not? 19 And Jesus saide vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they cannot fast. 20 But the daies will come, when the bridegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast in those daies.

Also no man soweth a piece of newe cloth in an olde garment: for els the newe piece that filled it vp, taketh away somewhat from the olde, and the breach is worse. 22 Likewise, no man putteth newe wine into old vessels: for els the newe breaketh the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but newe wine must be put into new vessels. 23 And it came to passe as hee went through the corne on the Sabbath day, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne. 24 And the Pharises saide vnto him, Beholde, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull? 25 And he saide to them, Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he had neede, and was an hun- gred, both he, and they that were with him? 26 Howe he went into the house of God, in the daies of Abiathar the hie Priest, and did eat the shewe bread, which were not lawfull to eate, but for the Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him? 27 And hee sayde to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. 28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

1 And he entred againe into ye Synagogue, and there was a man which had a withered had. 2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him. 3 Then he saide vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: stand forth in the middes. 4 And he saide to them, Is it lawfull to doe a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to doe euil? to saue the life, or to kill? But they held their peace. 5 Then he looked rounde about on them angrily, mourning also for the hardnesse of their hearts, and saide to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hande was restored, as whole as the other. 6 And the Pharises de-parted, and straightway gathered a councilli with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him. 7 But Jesus avoided with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, and from Iudea, 8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and beyonde Iordan: and they that dwelld about Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him in great number. 9 And he commanded his disciples, that a little shippe should waite for him, because of the multitu- de, lest they shoulde throng him. 10 For hee had heale many, in so much that they preassed vpon him to touch him, as many as had plagues. 11 And when the vnclene spirits sawe him, they fel downe before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God. 12 And he sharply rebuked them, to the ende they should not vtter him. 13 Then hee went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he woulde, and they came vnto him. 14 And hee appointed twelue that they should be with him, and that he might send them to preache, 15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils. 16 And the first was Si-
mon, and he named Simon, Peter, 17 Then James the son of Zebedeus, and John James brother (and sur-
named them Boanerges, which is, the sonnes of thunder,) 18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartlemew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James, the sonne of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite, 19 And Iu-
das Isciariot, who also betrayed him, and they came home. 20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread. 21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to laie hold on him: for they sayde that he was beside himselfe. 22 And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, saide, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils he casteth out deuils. 23 But he called them vnto him, and said vnto them in para-
bles, How can Satan driue out Sa-
tan? 24 For if a kingdome bee deuided against it selfe, that kingdome can not stand. Or if a house bee deuided against it selfe, that house can not continue. 26 So if Satan make in-
surrection against himselfe, and be deuided, hee can not endure but is at an ende. 27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except hee first binde that strong man, and then spoyle his house. 28 Verely I say vnto you, all sinnes shalbe forgiuen vnto the children of men, and blasphemies, wherewith they blasphem: 29 But hee that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall never haue forgiue-
nesse, but is culpable of eternall damnation. 30 Because they saide, Hee had an vnCLEANE spirit. 31 Then came his brethren and mother, and stoode without, and sent vnto him, and called him. 32 And the people sate about him, and they said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee without. 33 But hee answered them, saying, Who is my mother and my brethren? 34 And hee looked rounde about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and saide, Beholde my mother and my brethren. 35 For whosoever doeth the will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

4

1 And hee began againe to teache by the sea side, and there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that hee entred into a shipppe, and sate in the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on the land. 2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine, 3 Hearken: Beholde, there went out a sower to sowe. 4 And it came to passe as he sowed, that some fell by the way side, and the foules of the heauen came, and deoured it vp. 5 And some fell on stonie grounde, where it had not much earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had not depth of earth. 6 But assoone as ye Sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not roote, it withered away. 7 And some fell among the thornes, and the thornes grewe vp, and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite. 8 Some againe fell in good grounde, and did yeelde fruite that sprong vp, and grewe, and it brought foorth, some thirtie folde, some sixtie folde, and some an hun-
dreth folde. 9 Then he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 10 And whe he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of ye parable. 11 And he saide vnto them, To you it is giuen to knoewe the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things bee done in parables, 12 That they seeing, may see, and not discerne: and they hear-
ing, may heare, and not understand, least at any time they should turne, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them. 13 Againe he said vnto them, Perceiue ye not this parable? howe then should ye vnderstand all other parables? 14 The sower soweth the worde. 15 And these are they that receiue the seede by the wayes side,
in whome the worde is sown: but when they haue heard it, Satan com-
meth immediatly, and taketh away the worde that was sown in their
heartes. 16 And likewise they that receiue the seede in stony
ground, are they, which whe they haue heard the word, straightwayes receiue it
with gladnesse. 17 Yet haue they no roote in themselues, and endure but a
time: for when trouble and per-
secution ariseth for the worde, im-
mediatly they be offended. 18 Also
they that receiue the seede among the thornes, are such as heare the
word: 19 But the cares of this world,
and the deceitfulness of riches, and
the lustes of other things enter in, and choke the word, and it is vn-
fruitfull. 20 But they that haue re-
ceived seede in good ground, are they
that heare the worde, and receiue it, and bring forth fruite: one corne
thirtie, another sixtie, and some an
hundreth. 21 Also he saide vnto them,
Commeth the candle in, to be put
vnder a bushell, or vnder the bed, and
not to be put on a candlesticke? 22 For
there is nothing hid, that shall not be
opened: neither is there a secret,
but that it shall come to light. 23 If
any man haue eares to heare, let him
heare. 24 And he said vnto them,
Take heede what ye heare. With what
measure ye mete, it shall be measured
vnto you: and vnto you that heare,
shall more be giuen. 25 For vnto him
that hath, shall it be giuen, and from
him that hath not, shall be taken
away, euen that he hath. 26 Also he
said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a
man should cast seede in the ground,
27 And should sleepe, and rise vp
night and day, and the seede should
spring and growe vp, he not knowing
howe. 28 For the earth bringeth forth
fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then
the eares, after that full corne in the
eares. 29 And assoone as the fruite
sheweth it selfe, anon hee putteth
in the sickle, because the haruest is
come. 30 He saide moreover, Where-
unto shall wee liken the kingdome
of God? or with what comparison
shall we compare it? 31 It is like
a graine of mustarde seede, which
when it is sown in the earth, is the
least of all seedes that be in the earth:
32 But after that it is sown, it groweth
vp, and is greatest of all herbese, and
beareth great branches, so that the
foules of heauen may builde vnder
the shadow of it. 33 And with many
such parables he preached the word
vnto them, as they were able to heare
it. 34 And without parables spake
hee nothing vnto them: but he ex-
pounded all thinges to his disciples
apart. 35 Nowe the same day when
euen was come, he saide vnto them,
Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.
36 And they left the multitude, and
tooke him as he was in the shippes,
and there were also with him other
little shippes. 37 And there arose a
great storme of winde, and the waues
dashed into the shippes, so that it was
now full. 38 And he was in the sterne
asleepe on a pillow: and they awoke
him, and saide to him, Master, carest
thou not that we perish? 39 And hee
rose vp, and rebuked the winde, and
saide vnto the sea, Peace, and be still.
So the winde ceased, and it was a
great calme. 40 Then he saide vnto
them, Why are ye so fearefull? how
is it that ye haue no faith? 41 And
they feared exceedingly, and said one
to another, Who is this, that both the
winde and sea obey him?

5

1 And they came ouer to the other
side of the sea into the countrey of
the Gadarens. 2 And when he was come
out of the shippes, there met him in-
continently out of the graues, a man
which had an uncleane spirit: 3 Who
had his abiding among the graues, and
no man could binde him, no not
with chaines: 4 Because that when
hee was often bounde with fetters and
chaines, he plucked the chaines
asunder, and brake the fetters in
pieces, neither could any man tame
him. 5 And always both night and
day he cried in the mountaines, and in the graces, and strooke himselfe with stones. 6 And when he saw Iesus afarre off, he ranne, and worshipped him, 7 And cried with a loude voyce, and saide, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of the most high God? I will that thou swearre to me by God, that thou torment me not. 8 (For hee saide vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vnclene spirit.) 9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and hee answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many. 10 And hee prayed him instantly, that hee would not send them away out of the countrey. 11 Now there was there in the mountaines a great heard of swine, feeding. 12 And all ye deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them. 13 And incontinently Iesus gaue them leaue. Then the vnclane spirites went out, and entred into the swine, and the heard ranne headlong from the high banke into the sea, (and there were about two thousand swine) and they were choked vp in the sea. 14 And the swineheards fled, and told it in the citie, and in the countrey, and they came out to see what it was that was done. 15 And they came to Iesus, and sawe him that had bene possessed with the deuil, and had the legion, sit both clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afrade. 16 And they that saw it, tolde them, what was done to him that was possessed with the deuil, and concerning the swine. 17 Then they began to pray him, that hee would depart from their coastes. 18 And when he was come into the shippe, he that had bene possessed with the deuil, prayed him that he might be with him. 19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but said vnto him, Goe thy way home to thy friendes, and shewe them what great things the Lord hath done vnto thee, and howe hee hath had compassion on thee. 20 So he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, what great things Iesus had done vnto him: and all men did maruelt. 21 And when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, a great multitude gathered together to him, and he was neere vnto the sea. 22 And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he saw him, he fell downe at his feete, 23 And besought him instantly, saying, My litle daughter lyeth at point of death: I pray thee that thou wouldest come and lay thine hands on her, that she may be healed, and liue. 24 Then hee went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him. 25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, 26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and it auailed her nothing, but she became much worse. 27 When she had heard of Iesus, shee came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment. 28 For she said, If I may but touch his clothes, I shalbe whole. 29 And straightway the course of her blood was dried vp, and she felt in her body, that she was healed of that plague. 30 And immediatly when Iesus did knowe in himselfe the vertue that went out of him, he turned him round about in the preasse, and said, Who hath touched my clothes? 31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did touche me? 32 And he looked round about, to see her that had done that. 33 And the woman feared and trembled: for she knewe what was done in her, and shee came and fell downe before him, and tolde him the whole trueth. 34 And hee saide to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole: go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.) 35 While hee yet spake, there came from the same ruler of the Synagogues house certaine which said, Thy daughter is dead: why diseasest thou the Master any further? 36 Assoone as Iesus
heard that word spoken, he said vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afeare: onely beleue. 37 And he suffered no man to follow him saue Peter and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames. 38 So he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, and sawe the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. 39 And he went in, and said vnto them, Why make ye this trouble, and weepe? the childe is not dead, but sleepe. 40 And they laught him to scorne: but hee put them all out, and tooke the father, and the mother of the childe, and them that were with him, and entred in where the childe lay. 41 And tooke the childe by the hand, and saide vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretation, Mayden, I say vnto thee, arise. 42 And straightway the mayden arose, and walked: for shee was of the age of twelue yeeres, and they were astonied out of measure. 43 And he charged them straitly that no man should knowe of it, and commanded to giue her meate.

6

1 And he departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples followed him. 2 And when the Sabbath was come, he began to teach in the Synagogue, and many that heard him, were astonied, and sayd, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdome is this that is giuen vnto him, that euen such great works are done by his hands? 3 Is not this that carpenter Maries sonne, the brother of James and Ioses, and of Iuda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended in him. 4 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kindred, and in his own house. 5 And he could there doe no great works, saue that hee layd his hands upon a fewe sicke folke, and healed them. 6 And he marueiled at their vn-beliefe, and went about by ye townes on every side, teaching. 7 And he called vnto him the twelue, and began to send them forth two and two, and gaue them power ouer vnclene spirits, 8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their iourney, saue a staffe onely: neither scrip, neither bread, neither money in their girdles: 9 But that they should be shod with sandals, and that they should not put on two coates. 10 And he sayd vnto them, Wheresoeuer ye shall enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence. 11 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnes vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, It shalbe easier for Sodom, or Gomorrrha at the day of judgement, then for that citie. 12 And they went out, and preached, that men should amend their liues. 13 And they cast out many deuils: and they anointed many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed them. 14 Then King Herod heard of him (for his name was made manifest) and sayd, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great works are wrought by him. 15 Other sayd, It is Elias, and some sayd, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets. 16 So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead. 17 For Herod him selfe had sent forth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philippes wife, because he had maried her. 18 For Iohn sayd vnto Herod, It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife. 19 Therefore Herodias layd waite against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not: 20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that hee was a iust man, and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. 21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banket to his princes and captaines, and chiefe estates of
Mark 6:22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, the King sayd vnto the mayde, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I will giue it thee. 23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, euen vnto the halfe of my king-dome. 24 So she went forth, and said to her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, John Baptists head. 25 Then she came in straightway with haste vnto the King, and asked, saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me euen now in a charger the head of John Baptist. 26 Then the King was very sory: yet for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him, he would not refuse her. 27 And immediately the King sent the hangman, and gaue charge that his head shoulde be brought in. So he went and beheaded him in the prison, 28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maide, and the maide gaue it to her mother. 29 And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke vp his body, and put it in a tombe. 30 And the Apostles gathered themselues together to Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. 31 And he sayd vnto them, Come ye apart into the wildernes, and rest a while: for there were many commers and goers, that they had not pleasure to eate. 32 So they went by ship out of the way into a desart place. 33 But the people sawe them when they departed, and many knewe him, and ran a foote thither out of all cities, and came thither before them, and assembled vnto him. 34 Then Iesus went out, and sawe a great multitude, and had compassion on them, because they were like sheepe which had no shepheard: and he began to teach them many things. 35 And when the day was noe, farre passed. 36 Let them depart, that they may goe into the countreie and townes about, and buy them bread: for they haue nothing to eate. 37 But he answered, and said vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they said vnto him, Shall we goe, and buy two hundreth peny worth of bread, and giue them to eate? 38 Then he sayde vnto them, Howe many loaues haue ye? goe and looke. And when they knewe it, they sayd, Fiue, and two fishes. 39 So he commanded them to make them all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse. 40 Then they sate downe by rows, by hundreds, and by fifties. 41 And he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and gaue thanks, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them, and the two fishes he deuided among them all. 42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied. 43 And they tooke vp twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. 44 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand men. 45 And straightway he caused his disciples to goe into the ship, and to goe before vnto the other side vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. 46 Then assoone as he had sent them away, he departed into a mountaine to pray. 47 And when euem was come, the ship was in the mids of the sea, and he alone on the land. 48 And he saw them troubled in rowing, (for the winde was contrary vnto them) and about the fourth watch of the night, hee came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed by them. 49 And when they saw him walking vpon the sea, they supposed it had bene a spirit, and cried out. 50 For they all saw him, and were sore afrayed: but anon he talked with them, and said vnto them, Be ye of good comfort: it is I, be not afrayd. 51 Then he went vp vnto them into the ship, and the winde ceased, and they were much more amased in them selues,
and marueiled. 52 For they had not considered the matter of the loaues, because their hearts were hardened. 53 And they came ouer, and went into the land of Gennesaret, and arrived. 54 So when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knewe him, 55 And ran about throughout all that region round about, and began to cary hither and thither in couches all that were sicke, where they heard that he was. 56 And whithersoever he entred into townes, or cities, or villages, they laide their sicke in the streetes, and prayed him that they might touch at the least the edge of his garment. And as many as touched him, were made whole.

7

1 Then gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine of the Scribes which came from Hierusalem. 2 And when they sawe some of his disciples eate meate with common hands, (that is to say, vnwashen) they complained. 3 (For the Pharises, and all the Iews, except they wash their hands oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders. 4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eate not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, as the washing of cups, and pots, and of brassen vessels, and of beds.) 5 Then asked him the Pharises and Scribes, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate meate with vnwashen hands? 6 Then hee answered and sayd vnto them, Surely Esay hath prophesied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth mee with lippes, but their heart is farre away from me. 7 But they worship me in vaine, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men. 8 For ye lay the commandement of God apart, and obserue the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and of cups, and many other such like things ye doe. 9 And he sayd vnto them, Well, ye reiect the commandement of God, that ye may obserue your owne tradition. 10 For Moses sayd, Honour thy father and thy mother: and Whosoever shall speake euill of father or mother, let him die the death. 11 But yee say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, that is, By the gift that is offered by mee, thou mayest haue profite, hee shall be free. 12 So ye suffer him no more to doe any thing for his father, or his mother; 13 Making the worde of God of none authoritie, by your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye doe many such like things. 14 Then he called the whole multitude vnto him, and sayd vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderstand. 15 There is nothing without a man, that can defile him, when it entreth into him: but the things which proceede out of him, are they which defile the man. 16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare. 17 And when hee came into an house, away from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. 18 And he sayde vnto them, What? are ye without vnderstanding also? Doe ye not knowe that whatsoever thing from without entreth into a man, cannot defile him. 19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught which is the purging of all meates? 20 Then he sayd, That which commeth out of man, that defileth man. 21 For from within, euen out of the heart of men, proceeude euill thoughtes, adulteries, fornications, murthers, 22 Theftes, couetousnes, wickednes, deceite, vncleneanne, a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnesse. 23 All these euill things come from within, and defile a man. 24 And from thence he rose, and went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house, and woulde that no man should haue known: but he could not be hid. 25 For a certaine woman, whose little daugther had an vnclene spirit, heard of
him, and came, and fell at his feete,  
26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a  
Syrophenissian by nation) and she  
besought him that he would cast out  
the deuill out of her daughter. 27 But  
Iesus saide vnto her, Let the children  
first be fedde: for it is not good to  
take the childrens bread, and to cast it  
whelpes. 28 Then shee answered,  
and saide vnto him, True, Lord:  
yet in deede the whelpes eate vnder  
the table of the childrens crommes.  
29 Then he said vnto her, For this  
saying goe thy way: the deuil is gone  
out of thy daughter. 30 And when shee  
was come home to her house, shee  
founde the deuill departed, and her  
daughter lying on the bed. 31 And  
hee departed againe from the coastes  
of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto  
the sea of Galile, through the middes  
of the coastes of Decapolis. 32 And  
they brought vnto him one that was  
deafe and stammered in his speache,  
and prayed him to put his hand vpon  
him. 33 Then hee tooke him aside  
from the multitude, and put his fin-  
gers in his eares, and did spit, and  
touched his tongue. 34 And looking  
vp to heauen, hee sighed, and  
said vnto him, Ephphatha, that is,  
Be opened. 35 And straightway his  
eares were opened, and the string  
of his tongue was loosed, and hee  
spake plaine. 36 And he commanded  
them, that they should tell no man:  
but howe much soeuer hee forbad  
them, the more a great deale they  
published it, 37 And were beyonde  
measure astonied, saying, Hee hath  
done all thinges well: he maketh both  
deafe to heare, and the domme to  
speake.

8  
1 In those dayes, when there was a  
very great multitude, and had noth-  
ing to eate, Iesus called his disci-  
pies to him, and said vnto them, 2 I  
haue compassion on the multitude,  
because they haue nowe continued  
with mee three dayes, and haue noth-  
ing to eate. 3 And if I sende them  
away fasting to their owne houses,  
they woulde faint by the way: for  
some of them came from farre. 4 Then  
his disciples answered him, Whence  
can a man satisfie these with bread  
here in the wildernes? 5 And hee  
asked them, Howe many loaues haue  
ye? And they said, Seuen. 6 Then  
he commanded the multitude to sit  
downe on the grounde: and hee tooke  
the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes,  
brake them, and gaue to his disciples  
to set before them, and they did set  
them before the people. 7 They had  
also a few small fishes: and when he  
had giuen thankes, he commanded  
them also to be set before them.  
8 So they did eate, and were suf-  
ficed, and they tooke vp of the broken  
meate that was left, seuen baskets  
full. 9 (And they that had eaten,  
were about foure thousand) so he  
sent them away. 10 And anon he en-  
tered into a ship with his disciples, and  
came into the parts of Dalmanutha.  
11 And the Pharises came forth, and  
began to dispute with him, seeking  
of him a signe from heauen, and  
tempting him. 12 Then hee sighed  
deeply in his spirit, and saide, Why  
doeth this generation seeke a signe?  
Verely I say vnto you, a signe shall  
not be giuen vnto this generation.  
13 So he left them, and went into  
the ship againe, and departed to the  
other side. 14 And they had forgotten  
to take bread, neither had they in  
the shippe with them, but one loafe.  
15 And he charged them, saying, Take  
heed, and beware of the leauen of  
the Pharises, and of the leauen of  
Herod. 16 And they reasoned among  
themselves, saying, It is, because we  
haue no bread. 17 And when Iesus  
knew it, he said vnto them, Why  
reason you thus, because ye haue no  
bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither  
understande? haue ye your hearts yet  
hardened? 18 Haue yee eyes, and see  
not? and haue yee eares, and heare  
not? and doe ye not remember?  
19 When I brake the fiue loaues among
fiue thousand, how many baskets full of broken meate tooke ye vp? They said vnto him, Twelue. 20 And when I brake seuen among foure thousande, howe many baskets of the leauings of broken meate tooke ye vp? And they said, Seuen. 21 Then he saide vnto them, Howe is it that ye vnderstand not? 22 And hee came to Bethsaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, and desired him to touch him. 23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, and ledde him out of the towne, and spat in his eyes, and put his handes vpon him, and asked him, if he sawe ought. 24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them walking like trees. 25 After that, he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And hee was restored to his sight, and sawe euery man a farre off clearly. 26 And hee sent him home to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne. 27 And Iesus went out, and his disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way hee asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whome doe men say that I am? 28 And they answered, Some say, John Baptist: and some, Elias: and some, one of the Prophets. 29 And he said vnto them, But whome say ye that I am? Then Peter answered, and saide vnto him, Thou art that Christ. 30 And he sharply charged them, that concerning him they should tell no man. 31 Then he began to teache them that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and should be reproved of the Elders, and of the hie Priestes, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, and within three dayes rise againe. 32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him. 33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men. 34 And hee called the people vnto him with his disciples, and saide vnto them, Whosoeuer will follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me. 35 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, he shall saue it. 36 For what shall it profite a man, though he should winne the whole world, if he lose his soule? 37 Or what exchange shall a man giue for his soule? 38 For whosoeuer shall be ashamed of mee, and of my wordes among this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he commeth in the glorie of his Father with the holy Angels.

9

1 And he saide vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stande here, which shall not taste of death till they have seene the kindome of God come with power. 2 And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh vnto him Peter, and Iames, and John, and carieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his shape was changed before them. 3 And his rayment did shine, and was very white, as snowe, so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth. 4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses, and they were talking with Iesus. 5 Then Peter answered, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. 6 Yet hee knewe not what he saide: for they were afraide. 7 And there was a cloude that shadowed them, and a voyce came out of the cloude, saying, This is my beloved Sonne: heare him. 8 And suddenly they looked roud about, and sawe no more any man saue Iesus only with them. 9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them, that they should tell no man what they had seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe. 10 So they kept that matter to themselves, and
demanded one of another, what the rising from the dead againe should meane? 11 Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that Elias must first come? 12 And he answered, and said vnto them, Elias verely shall first come, and restore all things: and as it is written of the Sonne of man, hee must suffer many things, and be set at nought. 13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come, (and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would) as it is written of him. 14 And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes disputing with them. 15 And straightway all the people, when they behelde him, were amased, and ranne to him, and saluted him. 16 Then hee asked the Scribes, What dispute you among your selues? 17 And one of the companie answered, and said, Master, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumme spirit: 18 And whereasouer he taketh him, hee teareth him, and hee foameth, and gnasheth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not. 19 Then he answered him, and said, O faithlesse generation, how long now shall I be with you! how long now shall I suffer you! Bring him vnto me. 20 So they brought him vnto him: and assoone as the spirit sawe him, hee tare him, and hee fell downe on the ground walowing and forming. 21 Then he asked his father, How long time is it since he hath bin thus? And he said, Of a childe. 22 And oft times he casteth him into the fire, and into the water to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, helpe vs, and haue compassion vpon vs. 23 And Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleue it, al things are possible to him that beleueueth. 24 And straightway the father of the childe crying with teares, said, Lord, I beleue: helpe my vnbelaie. 25 When Iesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou domme and deafe spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him. 26 Then the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in so much that many said, He is dead. 27 But Iesus tooke his hande, and lift him vp, and he arose. 28 And when hee was come into the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why could not we cast him out? 29 And he saide vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come forth, but by prayer and fastinge. 30 And they departed thence, and went together through Galile, and hee would not that any should haue knowen it. 31 For he taught his discip- les, and saide vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be deliuered into the handes of men, and they shall kill him, but after that he is killed, he shall rise againe the third day. 32 But they understoode not that saying, and were afraide to aske him. 33 After, he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among you by the way? 34 And they helde their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselues, who should bee the chiefest. 35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and said to them, If any man desire to be first, the same shalbe last of all, and seruant vnto all. 36 And he tooke a little childe, and set him in the middes of them, and toke him in his armes, and saide vnto them, 37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such little children in my Name, receiuethe me: and whosoeuer receiuethe mee, receiuethe not me, but him that sent me. 38 Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we sawe one casting out deuils by thy Name, which followeth not vs, and we forbade him, because he followeth vs not. 39 But Iesus sayd, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can doe a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me. 40 For whosoeuer is not against vs, is on our part. 41 And whosoeuer shall gie you
a cup of water to drinke for my Names sake, because ye belong to Christ, verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his rewarde. 42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones, that beleue in me, it were better for him rather, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea. 43 Wherefore, if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, than hauing two hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched. 44 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 45 Likewise, if thy foote cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two feete, to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched, 46 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, pluckle it out: it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hell fire, 48 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. 49 For every man shalbe salted with fire: and euery sacrifice shalbe salted with salt. 50 Salt is good: but if the salt be vsauerie, wherewith shall it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

10

1 And he arose from thence, and went into the coastes of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan, and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as he was wont, he taught them againe. 2 Then the Pharisies came and asked him, if it were lawfull for a man to put away his wife, and tempted him. 3 And he answered, and sayde vnto them, What did Moses commaund you? 4 And they sayd, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away. 5 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you. 6 But at the beginning of the creation God made them male and female: 7 For this cause shall man leaue his father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife. 8 And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so that they are no more twaine, but one flesh. 9 Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not man separate. 10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of that matter. 11 And he sayd vnto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife and marrie another, committeth adulterie against her. 12 And if a woman put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adulterie. 13 Then they brought little children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. 14 But when Iesus sawe it, he was displeased, and said to them, Suffer the little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God. 15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein. 16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put his hands vpon them, and blessed them. 17 And when he was gone out on the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I doe, that I may possesse eternall life? 18 Iesus sayde to him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, even God. 19 Thou knowest the comandements, Thou shalt not commit adulterie. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false wittnesse. Thou shalt hurt no man. Honour thy father and mother. 20 Then he answered, and said to him, Master, all these things I haue observed from my youth. 21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and sayde vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee. Go and sell all that thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow me, and take vp the crosse. 22 But hee was sad at that saying, and went away sorow-
full: for he had great possessions. 23 And Jesus looked round about, and sayd vnto his disciples, Howe hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into the kingdom of God! 24 And his disciples were afraine at his words. But Jesus answered againe, and sayd vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God! 25 It is easier for a camel to goe through the eye of a needle, than for a riche man to enter into the kingdom of God. 26 And they were much more astonied, saying with themselues, Who then can be saued? 27 But Jesus looked vpon them, and sayd, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible. 28 Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue forsaken all, and haue folowed thee. 29 Jesus answered, and sayd, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels, 30 But he shall receiue an hundred fold, now at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands with persecutions, and in the world to come, eternall life. 31 But many that are first, shall be last, and the last, first. 32 And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem, and Jesus went before them and they were troubled, and as they followed, they were afraine, and Jesus tooke the twelue againe, and began to tell them what things should come vnto him, 33 Saying, Beholde, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the hie Priests, and to the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles. 34 And they shall mocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him, and kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe. 35 Then Iames and John the sonnes of Zebedeues came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest doe for vs that we desire. 36 And he sayd vnto them, What would ye I should doe for you? 37 And they said to him, Graunt vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glory. 38 But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye knowe not what ye aske. Can ye drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme that I shall be baptized with? 39 And they said vnto him, We can. But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of the cup that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shalbe baptized: 40 But to sit at my right hand, and at my left, is not mine to giue, but it shalbe giuen to them for whome it is prepared. 41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdain at Iames and John. 42 But Jesus called them vnto him, and sayd to them, Ye know that they which are princes among the Gentiles, haue domination ouer them, and they that be great among them, exercise authoritie ouer them. 43 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, shall be your seruant. 44 And whosoeuer will be chiefe of you, shall be the seruant of all. 45 For eu'n the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the raunsome of many. 46 Then they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his discipels, and a great multitude, Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus, a blinde man, sate by the wayes side, begging. 47 And when hee heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to crye, and to say, Jesus the Sonne of Daud, haue mercy on me. 48 And many rebuked him, because he should holde his peace: but hee cried much more, O Sonne of Daud, haue mercy on me. 49 Then Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they called the blind, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort: arise, he calleth thee. 50 So he threwe away his cloke, and rose, and came to Jesus. 51 And Jesus answered, and said
vn to him, What wilt thou that I doe vn to thee? And the blinde sayd vn to him, Lord, that I may receiue sight. 52 Then Iesus sayde vn to him, Goe thy way: thy fayth hath saue thee. And by and by, he receiued his sight, and folowed Iesus in the way.

11

1 And when they came neere to Hierusalem, to Bethphage and Bethania vn to the mount of Olives, he sent forth two of his disciples, 2 And sayd vn to them, Goe your wayes into that towne that is ouer against you, and assoone as ye shall enter into it, ye shall finde a colte tied, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him. 3 And if any man say vn to you, Why doe ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him, and straight-way he will send him hither. 4 And they went their way, and found a colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they loosed him. 5 Then certaine of them, that stode there, sayd vn to them, What doe ye loosing the colt? 6 And they sayde vn to them, as Iesus had commanded them: So they let them goe. 7 And they brought the colte to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him. 8 And many spred their garments in the way: other cut downe branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9 And they that went before, and they that folowed, cryed, saying, Hosanna: blessed be hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord. 10 Blessed be the kingdome that commeth in the Name of the Lord of our father Dauid: Hosanna, O thou which art in the highest heauens. 11 So Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on all things, and now it was euening, he went forth vn to Bethania with the twelue. 12 And on the morowe when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungry. 13 And seeing a fig tree afarre off, that had leaues, he went to see if he might finde any thing thereon: but when he came vn to it, hee found nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet. 14 Then Iesus answered, and sayd to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the world standeth: and his disciples heard it. 15 And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues. 16 Neither would hee suffer that any man should cary a vessell through the Temple. 17 And he taught, saying vn to them, Is it not written, Mine house shalbe called the house of prayer vn to all nations? but you haue made it a denne of theeues. 18 And the Scribes and hie Priestes heard it, and sought howe to destroy him: for they feared him, because the whole multitude was astonied at his doctrine. 19 But when euern was come, Iesus went out of the citie. 20 And in the morn- ing as they iourned together, they saw the figge tree dried vp from the roots. 21 Then Peter remembred, and said vn to him, Master, beholde, the figge tree which thou cursedst, is withered. 22 And Iesus answered, and said vn to them, Haue the faith of God. 23 For verely I say vn to you, that whosoever shalbe say vn to this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shall not wauer in his heart, but shall beleeeue that those things which he saieth, shall come to passe, whatsoeuer he saieth, shalbe done to him. 24 Therefore I say vn to you, Whatsoeuer ye de-sire when ye pray, beleeeue that ye shall haue it, and it shalbe done vn to you. 25 But when ye shall stand, and pray, forgie, if ye haue any thing against any man, that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgie you your trespasses. 26 For if you will not forgie your Father which is in heauen, will not pardon you your
trespasses. 27 Then they came againe to Hierusalem: and as he walked in the Temple, there came to him ye hie Priestes, and the Scribes, and the Elders, 28 And said vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldest doe these things? 29 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I will also aske of you a certaine thing, and answere ye me, and I will tell you by what authoritie I do these things. 30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answere me. 31 And they thought with themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleue him? 32 But if we say, Of men, we feare the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede. 33 Then they answered, and saide vnto Iesus, We cannot tell. And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

12

1 And he began to speake vnto them in parables, A certaine man planted a vineyard, and copassed it with an hedge, and digged a pit for the winepresse, and built a tower in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. 2 And at the time, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receive of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard. 3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and sent him away emptie. 4 And againe he sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away shamefully handled. 5 And againe he sent another, and him they slew, and many other, beating some, and killing some. 6 Yet had he one sonne, his deare beloved: him also he sent the last vnto them, saying, They will reverence my sonne. 7 But ye husbandmen said among themselues, This is the deare: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shalbe ours. 8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard. 9 What shall then the Lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and giue the vineyard to others. 10 Haue ye not read so much as this Scripture? The stone which the builders did refuse, is made the head of the corner. 11 This was done of the Lord, and it is marueilous in our eyes. 12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that he spake that parable against them: therefore they left him, and went their way. 13 And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pharises, and of ye Herodians that they might take him in his talke. 14 And when they came, they saide vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou considerest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God truely, Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not? 15 Should we giue it, or should we not giue it? but he knew their hypocrisie, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a peny, that I may see it. 16 So they brought it, and he said vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? and they said vnto him, Cesars. 17 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Giue to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God, those that are Gods: and they marueiled at him. 18 Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which say, there is no resurrection) and they asked him, saying, 19 Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and leave his wife, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and rayse vp seede vnto his brother. 20 There were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and when he died, left no issue. 21 Then the seconde tooke her, and he died, neither did he yet leave issue, and the third likewise: 22 So those seuen had her, and left no yssue: last of all the wife died also. 23 In the resurrection then, when they
shall rise againe, whose wife shall she be of them? for seuen had her to wife. 24 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Are ye not therefore deceived, because ye knowe not the Scriptures, neither the power of God? 25 For when they shall rise againe from the dead, neither men marry, nor wiuues are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen. 26 And as touching the dead, that they shall rise againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moses, howe in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? 27 God is not ye God of the dead, but the God of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceived. 28 Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them disputing together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, he asked him, Which is the first commandement of all? 29 Iesus answered him, The first of all the commandements is, Heare, Israel, The Lord our God is the onely Lord. 30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandement. 31 And the second is like, that is, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commandement greater then these. 32 Then that Scribe said vnto him, Well, Master, thou hast saide the trueth, that there is one God, and that there is none but he, 33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. 34 Then when Iesus saw that he answered discreetely, he saide vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question. 35 And Iesus answered and said teaching in the Temple, Howe say the Scribes that Christ is the sonne of Dauid? 36 For Dauid himselfe said by ye holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole. 37 Then Dauid himselfe calleth him Lord: by what meanes is he then his sonne? and much people heard him gladly. 38 Moreover he said vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, and loue salutations in the markets, 39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the first roumes at feastes, 40 Which deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers. These shall receiue the greatest damnation. 41 And as Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, he beheld how the people cast money into the treasurie, and many rich men cast in much. 42 And there came a certaine poore widoew, and she threw in two mites, which make a quadrin. 43 Then he called vnto him his disciples, and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widoew hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the treasurie. 44 For they all did cast in of their superfluitie: but she of her pouertie did cast in all that she had, euen all her liuing.

13

1 And as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what manner stones, and what manner buildings are here. 2 Then Iesus answered and saide vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be thrown downe. 3 And as he sate on the mount of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him secretly, 4 Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what shalbe the signe when all these things shalbe fulfilled? 5 And Iesus answered them, and began to say, Take heede lest any man deceiue you. 6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many. 7 Furthermore when ye
Mark 13:8

shall heare, of warres, and rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be: but the end shall not be yet. 8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shalbe earth- quakes in divers quarters, and there shalbe famine and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorowes. 9 But take ye heede to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to the Councils, and to the Synagogues: ye shalbe beaten, and brought before rulers and Kings for my sake, for a testimoniall vnto them. 10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations. 11 But when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not carefull before hand, neither studie what ye shall say: but what is giuen you at the same time, that speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost. 12 Yea, and the brother shall deliuer the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against their parents, and shall cause them to die. 13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but whosoever shall endure vnto the end, he shalbe saued. 14 Moreover, when ye shall see the abomination of desolation (spoken of by Daniel the Prophet) set where it ought not, (let him that readeth, consider it) then let them that be in Iудeа, flee into the mountaines, 15 And let him that is vpon the house, not come downe into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his house. 16 And let him that is in the fielde, not turne backe againe to take his garment. 17 Then wo shalbe to the that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes. 18 Pray therefore that your flight be not in the winter. 19 For those dayes shalbe such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of ye creation which God created vnto this time, neither shalbe. 20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh shoulde be saued: but for the elects sake, which he hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes. 21 Then if any man say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or, lo, he is there, beleue it not. 22 For false Christes shall rise, and false prophets, and shall shewe signes and wonders, to deceiue if it were possible the very elect. 23 But take ye heede: beholde, I haue shewed you all things before. 24 Moreover in those dayes, after that tribulation, the sunne shall waxe darke, and ye moone shall not giue her light, 25 And the starres of heauen shall fall: and the powers which are in heauen, shall shake. 26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in ye clouds, with great power and glory. 27 And he shall then send his Angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, and from the vtmost part of the earth to the vtmost part of heauen. 28 Nowe learne a parable of the figge tree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth forth leaues, ye knowe that sommer is neere. 29 So in like maner, when ye see these things come to passe, knowe that the kingdom of God is neere, euven at the doores. 30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done. 31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away. 32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himselfe, but the Father. 33 Take heede: watch, and praie: for yee knowe not when the time is. 34 For the Sonne of man is as a man going into a strange countrey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authoritie to his seruaunts, and to euery man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watch. 35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not whe ye master of the house will come, at eue, or at mid- night, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning,) 36 Least if he come suddenly, he should finde you sleeping. 37 And those things that I say vnto
you, I say vnto all men, Watch.

14

1 And two daies after followed the feast of the Passeouer, and of vn-leauened bread: and the hie Priests, and Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. 2 But they sayde, Not in the feast day, least there be any tumult among the people. 3 And when hee was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of oytment of spikenarde, very costly, and shee brake the boxe, and powred it on his head. 4 Therefore some dis-dained among themselues, and sayde, To what ende is this waste of oytment? 5 For it might haue bene sold for more then three hundreth pence, and bene giuen vnto the poore, and they murmured against her. 6 But Iesus saide, Let her alone: why trouble yee her? shee hath wrought a good worke on me. 7 For yee haue the poore with you alwaies, and when yee will yee may doe them good, but me yee shall not haue alwaies. 8 She hath done that shee could: shee came afore hand to anoynt my body to the burying. 9 Verely I say vnto you, where-soeuer this Gospel shal be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done, shalbe spoken of in remembrance of her. 10 Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the hie Priestes, to betray him vnto them. 11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised that they woulde giue him monie: therefore he sought howe he might conve-niently betraie him. 12 Nowe the first day of vnleauened bread, when they sacrificed the Passeouer, his disciples sayde vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer? 13 Then hee sent forth two of his disciples, and sayde vnto them, Goe yee into the citie, and there shall a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. 14 And whithersoeuer he goeth in, say yee to the good man of the house, The Master sayeth, Where is the lodging where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples? 15 And he wil shewe you an vpper chamber which is large, trimmed and prepared: there make it readie for vs. 16 So his disciples went foorth, and came to the citie, and found as he had said vnto them, and made readie the Passeouer. 17 And at euens hee came with the twelue. 18 And as they sate at table and did eate, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me, which eateth with me. 19 Then they began to be sorrowful and to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, Is it I? 20 And he answered and sayde vnto them, It is one of the twelue that dippeth with mee in the platter. 21 Truely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: but woe bee to that man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had beene good for that man, if hee had neuer beeene borne. 22 And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when hee had giuen thankes, he brake it and gaue it to them, and sayde, Take, eate, this is my bodie. 23 Also he tooke the cuppe, and when he had giuen thankes, he brake it and gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it. 24 And he saide vnto them, This is my blood of that newe Testament, which is shed for many. 25 Verely I say vnto you, I wil drinke no more of the fruit of ye vine vntill that day, that I drinke it newe in the kingdome of God. 26 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out to the mount of Oliues. 27 Then Iesus said vnto them, Al ye shall be offended by mee this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shall be scattered. 28 But after that I am risen, I will goe into Galile before you. 29 And Peter saide vnto him, Although all men should be offended at thee, yet would not I. 30 Then Iesus saide vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day, euens in this night, before
the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt de-
nie me thirse. 31 But he saide more
earnestly. If I shoulde die with thee,
I will not denie thee: likewise also
saide they all. 32 After, they came
into a place named Gethsemane: then
hee saide to his disciples, Sit yee
here, till I haue praied. 33 And hee
tooke with him Peter, and James, and
Iohn, and hee began to be troubled,
and in great heauinesse. 34 And saide
vnto them, My soule is very heauie,
euen vnto the death: tarie here, and
watch. 35 So he went forward a little,
and fell downe on the ground, and
praied, that if it were possible, that
houre might passe from him. 36 And
he saide, Abba, Father, all things are
possible vnto thee: take away this cup
from me: neuertheles not that I will,
but that thou wilt, be done. 37 Then
hee came, and founde them sleeping,
and said to Peter, Simon, sleepest
thou? couldest not thou watche one
houre? 38 Watch ye, and pray, that ye
enter not into tentation: the spirite in
deele is ready, but the flesh is weake.
39 And againe hee went away, and
praied, and spake the same wordeb.
40 And he returned, and founde them
a sleepe againe: for their eyes were
heauie: neither knewe they what they
should answere him. 41 And he
came the third time, and said vnto
them, Sleepe henceforth, and take
your rest: it is ynowe: the houre is
come: beholde, the Sonne of man is
deliuered into the hands of sinners.
42 Rise vp: let vs go: Ioe, he that be-
traieith me, is at hand. 43 And imme-
diately while hee yet spake, came Judas
that was one of the twelue, and with
him a great multitude with swords
and staues from the hie Priests, and
Scribes, and Elders. 44 And he that
betraied him, had giuen them a token,
saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, he
it is: take him and leade him away
safely. 45 And assoone as hee was
come, hee went straightway to him,
and saide, Haile Master, and kissed
him. 46 Then they laide their handes
on him, and tooke him. 47 And one
of them that stoode by, drewe out a
sword, and smote a seruant of the hie
Priest, and cut off his eare. 48 And
Iesus answered and saide to them, Ye
be come out as against a thiefs with
swordes, and with staues, to take me.
49 I was daily with you teaching in
the Temple, and yee tooke me not:
but this is done that the Scriptures
should be fulfilled. 50 Then they all
forsooke him, and fled. 51 And there
followed him a certaine yong man,
clothed in linnen vpon his bare bodie,
and the yong men caught him. 52 But
he left his linnen cloth, and fled from
them naked. 53 So they led Iesus away
to the hie Priest, and to him came
together all the hie Priestes, and
the Elders, and the Scribes. 54 And
Peter followed him afarre off, euen
into the hall of the hie Priest, and
sate with the seruants, and warmed
himselfe at the fire. 55 And the hie
Priests, and all the Councill sought
for witnesse against Iesus, to put him
to death, but found none. 56 For
many bare false witnesse against him,
but their witnesse agreed not to-
gether. 57 Then there arose cer-
taine, and bare false witnesse against
him, saying, 58 We hearde him say, I
will destroy this Temple made with
hands, and within three daies I will
builde another, made without hands.
59 But their witnesse yet agreed not
together. 60 Then the hie Priest
stoope vp amongst them, and asked
Iesus, saying, Answerest thou noth-
ing? what is the matter that these
beare witnesse against thee? 61 But
hee helde his peace, and answered
nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked
him, and sayde vnto him, Art thou
that Christ the Sonne of the Blessed?
62 And Iesus said, I am he, and yee
shall see the Sonne of man sitte at
the right hande of the power of God,
and come in the clouds of heauen.
63 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes,
and sayd, What haue we any more
neede of witnesse? 64 Ye haue heard
the blasphemie: what thinke yee?
And they all condemned him to be.
worthie of death. 65 And some began to spit at him, and to couer his face, and to beate him with fists, and to say vnto him, Prophesie. And the sergeants smote him with their rod- des. 66 And as Peter was beneath in the hal, there came one of the maides of the hie Priest. 67 And when shee sawe Peter warming him selfe, shee looked on him, and sayde, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth. 68 But he denied it, saying, I knowe him not, neither wot I what thou saiest. Then he went out into the porche, and the cocke crewe. 69 Then a maid sawe him againe, and bega to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. 70 But hee denied it againe: and anon after, they that stoode by, sayde againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art of Galile, and thy speach is like. 71 And he began to curse, and sweare, saying, I knowe not this man of whom ye speake. 72 Then the seconde time the cocke crewe, and Peter remembred the woorde that Iesus had saiide vnto him, Before the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt denye me thrise, and waying that with him-selxe, he wept.

15

1 And anon in the dawning, the hie Priestes helde a Councill with the Elders, and the Scribes, and the whole Council, and bound Iesus, and led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate. 2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And hee answered, and sayde vnto him, Thou sayest it. 3 And the hie Priestes accused him of many things. 4 Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, saying, Anwerest thou nothing? beholde howe many things they winnesse against thee. 5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marueiled. 6 Nowe at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomesoeuer they woulde desire. 7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bounde with his felowe, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murder. 8 And the people cried aloude, and began to desire that he woulde doe as he had euer done vnto them. 9 Then Pilate answered them, and said, Will ye that I let loose vnto you the King of ye Iewes? 10 For he knewe that the hie Priestes had deliuered him of enuie. 11 But the high Priestes had mowed the people to desire that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them. 12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will ye then that I doe with him, whom ye call the King of the Iewes? 13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him. 14 Then Pilate said vnto them, But what euill hath he done? And they cryed the more feruently, Crucifie him. 15 So Pilate willing to content the people, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that he might be crucified. 16 Then the soldiers led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band. 17 And clad him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his head. 18 And began to salute him, saying, Haile, King of the Iewes. 19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and spat vpon him, and bowed the knees, and did him reuenerance. 20 And whe they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him. 21 And they compelled one that passed by, called Simon of Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to bear his crosse. 22 And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of dead mens skulles. 23 And they gaine him to drinke wine mingled with myrhe: but he receiued it not. 24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots for them, what euery man should haue. 25 And it was the third hour, when they crucifie him. 26 And ye
title of his cause was written aboue, THAT KING OF THE JEWES. 27 They crucified also with him two theuees, the one on ye right hand, and the other on his left. 28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled, which sayth, And he was counted among the wicked. 29 And they that went by, railing on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Hey, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, 30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the crosse. 31 Likewise also euens the hie Priests mocking, said among themselues with the Scribes, He saued other men, himselfe he cannot saue. 32 Let Christ the King of Israel nowe come downe from the crosse, that we may see, and beleuee. They also that were crucified with him, reuled him. 33 Nowe when the sixt hour was come, darkenesse arose ouer all the land vntill the ninth hour. 34 And at the ninth hour Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabachthani? which is by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? 35 And some of them that stoode by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias. 36 And one ranne, and filled a spondge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let him alone: let vs see if Elias will come, and take him downe. 37 And Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost. 38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the bottome. 39 Nowe when the Centurion, which stooode ouer against him, sawe that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost, he saide, Truely this man was the Sonne of God. 40 There were also women, which beheld afarre off, among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie (the mother of James the lesse, and of Ioses) and Salome. 41 Which also when he was in Galile, folowed him, and ministred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem. 42 And nowe when the night was come (because it was the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath) 43 Joseph of Ari- mathe, an honorable counsellour, which also looked for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus. 44 And Pilate marueiled, if he were already dead, and called vnto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether he had bene any while dead. 45 And when he knewe the truthe of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioseph: 46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen cloth, and laide him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre: 47 And Marie Magdalene, and Marie Ioses mother, behelde where he should be layed.

16

1 And when the Sabbath day was past, Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Salome, bought sweete oynments, that they might come, and anoynt him. 2 Therefore early in the morning, the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the Sunne was nowe risen. 3 And they saide one to another, Who shall rolle vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre? 4 And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one) 5 So they went into the sepulchre, and saw a yong man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled. 6 But he said vnto them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bene crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him. 7 But goe your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he will goe before you into Galilie: there shall ye see him, as he said vnto you. 8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled, and were amased: neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraide.
And when Iesus was risen againe, early the first day of the weeke, he appeared first to Marie Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seuen deuils: 

And shee went and tolde them that had bene with him, which mourned and wept. 

And when they heard that he was aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeeued it not. 

After that, he appeared vnto two of them in an other forme, as they walked and went into the countrey. 

And they went, and told it to the remnant, neither beleeeued they them. 

Finally, he appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeeued not them which had seene him, being risen vp againe. 

And he saide vnto them, Goe ye into all the worlde, and preach the Gospel to euery creature. 

He that shall beleeeue and be baptized, shalbe saued: but he that will not beleeeue, shalbe damned. 

And these tokens shall folowe them that beleeeue, In my Name they shall cast out deuils, and shall speake with newe tongues, 

And shall take away serpents, and if they shall drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them: they shall lay their handes on the sicke, and they shall recouer. 

So after ye Lord had spoken vnto them, he was receiued into heauen, and sate at the right hand of God. 

And they went foorth, and preached euery where. And the Lord wrought with them, and confirmed the worde with signes that folowed. Amen.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. LUKE

1 Forasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set foorth the storie of those things, whereof we are fully persuaded, 2 As they haue delievered them vnto vs, which from the beginning saw them their selues, and were ministers of ye word, 3 It seemed good also to me (most noble Theophilus) assoone as I had searched out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee thereof from point to point, 4 That thou mightest acknowledge the certainties of those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed. 5 In the time of Herod King of Iudea, there was a certaine Priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabet. 6 Both were iust before God, and walked in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord, without reprooфе. 7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age. 8 And it came to passe, as he executed the Priestes office before God, as his course came in order, 9 According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense, when he went into the Temple of the Lord. 10 And the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer, while the incense was burning. 11 Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense. 12 And when Zacharias sawe him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him. 13 But the Angel saide vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wise Elisabet shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn. 14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnes, and many shall rejoyce at his birth. 15 For he shalbe great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shalbe filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe. 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turne to their Lord God. 17 For he shall goe before him in the spirite and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdome of the iust men, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. 18 Then Zacharias said vnto ye Angel, Whereby shall I knowe this? for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great age. 19 And the Angell answered, and sayde vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shew thee these good tidings. 20 And beholde, thou shalt be domme, and not be able to speake, vntill the day that these things be done, because thou beleueuest not my words, which shalbe fulfilled in their season. 21 Now the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that he taried so long in the Temple. 22 And when hee came out, hee could not speake vnto them: then they perceived that hee had seene a vision in the Temple: For he made signes vnto them, and remained domme. 23 And it came to passe, when the daies of his office were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne house. 24 And after those daies, his wife Elisabet conceiued, and hid selfe fiue moneths, saying, 25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the daies wherein he looked on me, to take from me my rebuke among men. 26 And in the sixth moneth, the Angell Gabriel was sent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth. 27 To a virgin affianced to a man whose name was Ioseph, of the house of Davuid, and the virgins name was Marie. 28 And the Angell went in vnto her, and said, Haile thou that art freely beloued: the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. 29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and thought what maner of salutation that should be. 30 Then the Angel saide vnto her, Feare not, Marie:
for thou hast found fauour with God. 31 For loe, thou shalt conceive in thy wobe, and beare a sonne, and shalt call his name Iesus. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Sonne of the most High, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. 33 And hee shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome shall bee none ende. 34 Then sayde Marie vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I knowe not man? 35 And the Angel answered, and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the most High shall ouershadowe thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall bee borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God. 36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her olde age: and this is her sixt moneth, which was called barren. 37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible. 38 Then Marie said, Behold the seruant of the Lord: be it vnto me according to thy woorde. So the Angel departed from her. 39 And Marie arose in those daies, and went into ye hil countrey with hast to a citie of Iuda, 40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabet. 41 And it came to passe, as Elisabet heard the salutation of Marie, the babe sprang in her bellie, and Elisabet was filled with the holy Ghost. 42 And she cried with a loud voice, and saide, Blessed art thou among women, because the fruit of thy wombe is blessed. 43 And whence commeth this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? 44 For loe, assoone as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my bellie for ioye, 45 And blessed is shee that beleeued: for those things shall be perfourned, which were tolde her from the Lord. 46 Then Marie sayde, My soule magnifieth the Lord, 47 And my spirite reioyceth in God my Saviour. 48 For hee hath looked on the poore degree of his seruaunt: for beholde, from henceforth shall all ages call me blessed, 49 Because hee that is mightie, hath done for me great things, and holy is his Name. 50 And his mercie is from generation to generation on them that feare him. 51 Hee hath shewed strength with his arme: hee hath scattered the proude in the imagination of their hearts. 52 Hee hath put downe the mighty from their seates, and exalted them of lowe degree. 53 Hee hath filled the hungrie with good things, and sent away the rich emptie. 54 Hee hath vp Holden Israel his seruaunt to be mindefull of his mercie 55 (As hee hath spoken to our fathers, to wit, to Abraham, and his seede) for euer. 56 And Marie abode with her about three moneths: after, shee returned to her owne house. 57 Nowe Elisabets time was fulfilled, that shee should be deliuered, and shee brought foorth a sonne. 58 And her neighbours, and cousins heard tell howe the Lord had shewed his great mercie vpon her, and they reioyced with her. 59 And it was so that on the eights day they came to circumcise the babe, and called him Zacharias after the name of his father. 60 But his mother answered, and saide, Not so, but he shalbe called Iohn. 61 And they saide vnto her, There is none of thy kin- dred, that is named with this name. 62 Then they made signes to his father, howe he would haue him called. 63 So hee asked for writing tables, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, and they maruellled all. 64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue, and he spake and praised God. 65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and all these woordes were noised abroade throughout all the hill countrey of Iudea. 66 And al they that heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner childe shall this be? and the hand of the Lord was with him. 67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and proph-
esied, saying, 68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, because he hath visited and redeemed his people, 69 And hath raised vp the horne of salvation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid, 70 As he spake by ye mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, saying, 71 That he would sende vs deliuerance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs, 72 That he might shewe mercie towards our fathers, and remember his holy covenant, 73 And the othe which he swore to our father Abraham. 74 Which was, that he would graunt vnto vs, that we being deliveried out of the handes of our enemies, should serue him without feare, 75 All the daies of our life, in holinesse and righteousnesse before him. 76 And thou, babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his waies, 77 And to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes, 78 Through ye tender mercy of our God, wherby the day spring from an hie hath visited vs, 79 To giue light to them that sit in darknes, and in the shadow of death, and to guide our feete into the way of peace. 80 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wilderness, til the day came that he should shewe him selfe vnto Israel.

2

1 And it came to passe in those daies, that there came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all the world should be taxed. 2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria.) 3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery man to his owne Citie. 4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of Dauid, which is called Beth-leem (because he was of the house and lineage of Dauid,) 5 To bee taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe. 6 And so it was, that while they were there, the daies were accomplished that shee should be deliuered, 7 And she brought foorth her first begotten sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laide him in a cratch, because there was no roome for them in the yne. 8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the fiedle, and keeping watch by night ouer their flocke. 9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glorie of the Lord shone about them, and they were sore affraide. 10 Then the Angel saide vnto them, Be not afraid: for behold, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, that shalbe to all the people, 11 That is, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Dauid, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. 12 And this shalbe a signe to you, Yee shall finde the babe swadled, and laid in a cratch. 13 And straightway there was with the Angel a multitude of heauenly soldiers, praising God, and saying, 14 Glory be to God in the high heauens, and peace in earth, and towards men good will. 15 And it came to passe whe the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the shepheards sayde one to another, Let vs goe then vnto Beth-leem, and see this thing that is come to passe which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs. 16 So they came with haste, and founde both Marie and Ioseph, and the babe layd in the cratch. 17 And when they had seene it, they published abroad the thing, that was tolde them of that childe. 18 And all that heard it, wontred at ye things which were tolde them of the shepheards. 19 But Mary kept all those sayings, and pondred them in her heart. 20 And the shepheardes returned glorifying and praising God, for all that they had heard and seene as it was spoken vnto them. 21 And when the eight daies were accomplished, that they shoulde circumcise the childe, his name was then called Jesus, which was named of
the Angell, before he was conceived in the wombe. 22 And when the daies of her purification after the Lawe of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord, 23 (As it is written in the Lawe of the Lord, Every man childe that first openeth ye wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord) 24 And to giue an oblation, as it is commanded in the Lawe of the Lord, a pair of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons. 25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon: this man was iust, and feared God, and waited for the consolation of Israel, and the holy Ghost was vpon him. 26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene that Anointed of the Lord. 27 And he came by the motion of the spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to do for him after the custome of the Lawe, 28 Then hee tooke him in his armes, and praised God, and sayd, 29 Lord, nowe lettest thou thy seruuant depart in peace, according to thy woorde, 30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation, 31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people, 32 A light to be reueiled to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel. 33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things, which were spoken touching him. 34 And Simeon blessed them, and saieth vnto Mary his mother, Beholde, this childe is appointed for the fall and rising againe of many in Israel, and for a signe which shalbe spoken against, 35 (Yea and a sworde shall percease through thy soule) that the thoughts of many heartes may be opened. 36 And there was a Prophetesse, one Ana the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, after she had liued with an husband seuen yeeres from her virginitie: 37 And she was widowe about foure score and foure yeeres, and went not out of the Temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers, night and day. 38 She then coming at the same instant vpon them, confessed likewise the Lord, and spake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hierusalem. 39 And when they had performed all things according to the lawe of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth. 40 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in Spirit, and was filled with wisedome, and the grace of God was with him. 41 Nowe his parents went to Hierusalem euery yeere, at the feast of the Passeouer. 42 And when hee was twelve yeere olde, and they were come vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast, 43 And had finished the daies thereof, as they returned, the childe Iesus remained in Hierusalem, and Ioseph knew not, nor his mother, 44 But they supposing, that he had bene in the company, went a daies iournye, and sought him among their kinsfolke, and acquainted. 45 And when they found him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem, and sought him. 46 And it came to passe three daies after, that they found him in the Temple, sitting in the mids of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions: 47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his understanding and answeres. 48 So when they sawe him, they were amased, and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? beholde, thy father and I have sought thee with very heauie hearts. 49 Then said he vnto them, Howe is it that ye sought me? knewe ye not that I must goe about my Fathers busines? 50 But they vnderstoode not the word that he spake to them. 51 Then hee went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect to them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. 52 And Iesus increased in wisedome, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.
3

1 Nowe in the fiftene yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iuade, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene, 2 (When Annas and Caiaphas were the hie Priestes) the worde of God came vnto Iohn, the sonne of Zacharias in the wildernes. 3 And hee came into all the coastes about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes, 4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which saith, The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernes is, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his paths straight. 5 Euery valley shalbe filled, and euery mountaine and hill shall be brought lowe, and crooked things shalbe made straight, and the rough wayes shalbe made smoothe. 6 And all flesh shal see the salvation of God. 7 Then said he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring foorth therefore fruitful amendement of life, and beginne not to say with your selues, We haue Abraham to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham. 9 Nowe also is the axe layed vnto the roote of the trees: therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, shalbe hewn downe, and cast into the fire. 10 Then the people asked him, saying, What shall we doe then? 11 And he answered, and said vnto them, He that hath two coates, let him part with him that hath none: and hee that hath meate, let him doe likewise. 12 Then came there Publicanes also to bee baptized, and saide vnto him, Master, what shall we doe? 13 And hee saide vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you. 14 The soldiars likewise demaunded of him, saying, And what shall we doe? And he saide vnto them, Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages. 15 As the people waited, and all men mused in their hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Christ, 16 Iohn answered, and saide to them all, In deede I baptize you with water, but one stronger then I, commeth, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose: hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. 17 Whose name is in his hande, and hee will make cleane his floore, and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe will hee burne vp with fire that neuer shalbe quenched. 18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, hee preached vnto the people. 19 But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother Philipis wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done, 20 He added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison. 21 Nowe it came to passe, as all the people were baptized, and that Iesus was baptized and did pray, that the heauen was opened: 22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a doue, vpon him, and there was a voyce from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloved Sonne: in thee I am well pleased. 23 And Iesus himselfe began to bee about thirtie yeere of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Eli, 24 The sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui, the sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Ianna, the sonne of Ioseph, 25 The sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Amos, the sonne of Naum, the sonne of Eslie, the sonne of Nagge, 26 The sonne of Maath, the sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Semei, the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of Iuda, 27 The sonne of Ioanna, the sonne of Rhesa, the sonne of Zorobabel, the sonne of Salathiel, the sonne of Neri, 28 The sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Addi, the sonne of Cosam, the sonne of Elmodam, the sonne of Er, 29 The sonne of Iose, the sonne of Eliezer, the sonne of Iorim, the sonne
of Matthat, the son of Leui, 30 The
sonne of Simeon, the sonne of Iuda,
the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of
Ionan, the sonne of Eliacim, 31 The
sonne of Melea, the sonne of Mainan,
the sonne of Mattatha, the sonne of
Nathan, the sonne of Dauid, 32 The
sonne of Jesse, the sonne of Obed, the
sonne of Booz, the sonne of Salmon,
the sonne of Naasson, 33 The sonne
of Aminadab, the sonne of Aram, the
sonne of Esrom, the sonne of Phares,
the sonne of Iuda, 34 The sonne of
Iacob, the sonne of Isaac, the sonne
of Abraham, the sonne of Thara, the
sonne of Nachor, 35 The sonne of
Saruch, the sonne of Ragau, the sonne
of Phalec, the sonne of Eber, the
sonne of Sala, 36 The sonne of Cainan,
the sonne of Arphaxad, the sonne of
Sem, the sonne of Noe, the sonne of
Lamech, 37 The sonne of Mathusala,
the sonne of Enoch, the sonne of Iared,
the sonne of Maleeel, the
sonne of Cainan, 38 The sonne of Enos,
the sonne of Seth, the sonne of Adam,
the sonne of God.

4 1 And Iesus full of the holy Ghost
returned from Iordan, and was led
by that Spirit into the wildernes,
2 And was there fourtie dayes tempted
of the deuil, and in those dayes he
did eate nothing: but when they
were ended, he afterward was hun-
gry. 3 Then the deuil saide vnto
him, If thou be the Sonne of God,
command this stone that it be made
bread. 4 But Iesus answered him,
saying, It is written, That man shall
not liue by bread only, but by every
word of God. 5 Then the deuil tooke
him vp into an high mountaine, and
shewed him all the kingdoms of the
world, in the twinkeling of an eye.
6 And the deuil saide vnto him, All
this power will I giue thee, and
the glory of those kingdoms: for that
is deliuered to mee: and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it. 7 If thou there-
fore wilt worship mee, they shalbe all
thine. 8 But Iesus answered him, and
saide, Hence from mee, Satan: for it is
written, Thou shalt worship the Lord
thy God, and him alone thou shalt
serve. 9 Then hee brought him to
Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle
of the Temple, and said vnto him, If
thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy
selfe downe from hence, 10 For it is
written, That hee will giue his An-

gels charge ouer thee to keepe thee:
11 And with their handes they shall
lift thee vp, least at any time thou
shouldest dash thy foote against a
stone. 12 And Iesus answered, and said
vnto him, It is said, Thou shalt not
tempt the Lord thy God. 13 And when
the deuil had ended all the tentation,
he departed from him for a little sea-
son. 14 And Iesus returned by the
power of the spirite into Galilie: and
there went a fame of him throughout
eall the region round about. 15 For
he taught in their Synagogues, and
was honoured of all men. 16 And
hee came to Nazareth where hee had
dene brought vp, and (as his custome
was) went into the Synagogue on the
Sabbath day, and stoode vp to reade.
17 And there was deliuered vnto him
the booke of the Prophet Esaia: and
when hee had opened the booke, hee
founde the place, where it was writ-
ten, 18 The Spirit of the Lord is vpon
mee, because he hath anoynted me,
that I should preach the Gospel to
the poore: he hath sent mee, that
I should heale the broken hearted,
that I should preach deliuerance to
the captiues, and recouering of sight
to the blinde, that I should set at
libertie them that are bruised: 19 And
that I should preache the acceptable
yeere of the Lord. 20 And hee closed
the booke, and gaue it againe to the
minister, and sate downe: and the
eyes of all that were in the Synagogue
were fastened on him. 21 Then he
began to say vnto them, This day is
the Scripture fulfilled in your eares.
22 And all bare him witnes, and won-
dered at the gracius wordes, which
proceeded out of his mouth, and said,
Is not this Iosephs sonne? 23 Then
he said vnto them, Ye will surely
say vn to mee this prouerbe, Physi-
cian, heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer we
haue heard done in Capernaum, doe it
here likewise in thine owne countrey.
24 And he saide, Verely I say vn to you,
No Prophet is accepted in his owne
country. 25 But I tell you of a truth,
many widowes were in Israel in the
dayes of Elias, when heauen was shut
three yeres and sixe moneths, when
great famine was throughout all the
land: 26 But vn to none of them was
Elias sent, saue into Sarepta, a citie
of Sidon, vn to a certayne widowe.
27 Also many lepers were in Israel,
in the time of Eliseus the Prophet:
yet none of them was made cleane,
sauing Naaman the Syrian. 28 Then
all that were in the Synagogue, when
they heard it, were filled with wrath,
29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of
the citie, and led him vn to the edge of
the hil, whereon their citie was built,
to cast him downe headlong. 30 But he
passed through the middes of them,
and went his way, 31 And came downe
into Capernaum a citie of Galile, and
there taught them on the Sabbath
dayes. 32 And they were astonied at
his doctrine: for his worde was with
authoritie. 33 And in the Synagogue
there was a man which had a spirit
of an vn cleane deuill, which cryed
with a loude voyce, 34 Saying, Oh,
what haue we to doe with thee, thou
Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to
destroy vs? I know who thou art,
euen the holy one of God. 35 And
Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy
peace, and come out of him. Then
the deuill throwing him in the middes
of them, came out of him, and hurt
him nothing at all. 36 So feare came
on them all, and they spake among
themselves, saying, What thing is
this: for with authoritie and power he
commandeth the foule spirits, and
they come out? 37 And ye fame of
him spred abroad throughout all the
places of the countrey round about.
38 And he rose vp, and came out of the
Synagogue, and entred into Simons
house. And Simons wiuers mother was
taken with a great feuer, and they re-
quired him for her. 39 Then he stood
ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and
it left her, and immediatly she arose,
and ministred vn to them. 40 Now
at the sune setting, all they that
had sicke folkes of diuers diseases,
brought them vn to him, and he layd
his hands on every one of them, and
healed them. 41 And deuils also came
out of many, crying, and saying, Thou
art that Christ that Sonne of God: but
he rebuked them, and suffered them
to say that they knewe him to be
that Christ. 42 And when it was day,
he departed, and went foorth into a
desart place, and the people sought
him, and came to him, and kept him
that he should not depart from them.
43 But he sayd vn to them, Surely I
must also preach the kingdome of
God to other cities: for therefore am
I sent. 44 And hee preached in the
Synagogues of Galile.

5

1 Then it came to passe, as the
people preassd vpon him to heare
the word of God, that he stoode
by the lake of Gennesaret. 2 And sawe
two shippes stand by the lakes side,
but the fishermen were gone out of
them, and were washing their nettes.
3 And he entred into one of the ships,
which was Simons, and required him
that he would thrust off a little from
the land: and he sate downe, and
taught the people out of the ship.
4 Now when he had left speaking, he
sayd vn to Simon, Lanch out into the
deepe, and let downe your nettes to
make a draught. 5 Then Simon an-
swered, and sayd vn to him, Master,
we haue traualied sore all night, and
haue taken nothing: neverthellesse at
thy worde I will let downe the net.
6 And when they had so done, they
enclosed a great multitude of fishes,
so that their net brake. 7 And they
beckened to their partners, which
were in the other ship, that they
shoulde come and helpe them, who
came then, and filled both the ships, that they did sink. 8 Now when Simon Peter saw it, he fel down at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, go from me: for I am a sinful man. 9 For he was vtterly astonied, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke. 10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus sayde vnto Simon, Feare not: from henceforth thou shalt catch men. 11 And when they had brought the ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him. 

12 Nowe it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, beholde, there was a man full of leprosie, and when he saw Iesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. 13 So he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediately the leprosie departed from him. 14 And he commanded him that hee should tell it no man: but Go, sayth he, and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, as Moses hath commanded, for a witnes vnto them. 15 But so much more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him of their infirmities. 16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wildernes, and prayed. 17 And it came to passe, on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises and doctours of the Law sate by, which were come out of euery towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hierusalem, and the power of the Lord was in him to heale them. 18 Then beholde, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the preasse, they went vp on the house, and let him downe through the tyling, bed and all, in the middes before Iesus. 20 And when he sawe their faith, he sayd vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgien thee. 21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgien sinnes, but God onely? 22 But when Iesus perceived their reasoning, he answered, and sayd vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts? 23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgien thee, or to say, Rise and walke? 24 But that ye may know that that Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgien sinnes in earth, (he sayd vnto the sicke of the palsy) I say to thee, Arise: take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house. 25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp his bed whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, praying God. 26 And they were all amazed, and prayed God, and were filled with feare, saying, Doubtlesse we haue seene strange things to day. 27 And after that, he went foureth and sawe a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receite of custome, and sayd vnto him, Follow me. 28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him. 29 Then Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where there was a great company of Publicanes, and of other that sate at table with them. 30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises among them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eate ye and drinke ye with Publicanes and sinners? 31 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, They that are whole, neede not the Physician, but they that are sicke. 32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repen-tance. 33 Then they said vnto him, Why do the disciples of Iohn fast of-ten, and pray, and the disciples of the Pharises also, but thine eate and drink? 34 And he said vnto them, Can ye make the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as the bride-grome is with them? 35 But the dayes will come, even when the bride-grome shalbe taken away from them:
then shall they fast in those dayes. 36 Againe he spake also vnto them a parable, No man puttheth a piece of a newe garment into an olde vesture: for then the newe renteth it, and the piece taken out of the newe, agreeith not with the olde. 37 Also no man powreth newe wine into olde vessels: for then ye newe wine wil breake the vessels, and it will runne out, and the vessels will perish: 38 But newe wine must be powred into newe vessels: so both are preserved. 39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth newe: for he sayth, The olde is more profitable.

6 1 And it came to passe on a secon solemn sabbath, that hee went through the corne fieldes, and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, and rub them in their hands. 2 And certaine of the Pharises sayde vnto them, Why doe ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes? 3 Then Iesus answered them, and said, Haue ye not read this, that Davi did when he himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him, 4 Howe he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewbread, and gaue also to them which were with him, which was not lawful to eate, but for the Priests onely? 5 And he sayd vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day. 6 It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that hee entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dryed vp. 7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath day, that they might finde an accusation against him. 8 But he knew their thoughts, and sayd to the man which had the withered hand, Arise, and stand vp in the middes. And hee arose, and stoode vp. 9 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroie? 10 And he behelde them all in compass, and sayd vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored againe, as whole as the other. 11 Then they were filled full of madness, and communed one with another, what they might doe to Iesus. 12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went into a mountaine to praye, and spent the night in prayer to God. 13 And when it was daie, he called his disciples, and of them he chose twelue which also he called Apostles. 14 (Simon whome he named also Petar, and Andrew his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philippe and Bartlemewe: 15 Matthewe and Thomas: Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelous, 16 Judas Iames brother, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.) 17 Then he came downe with them, and stood in a plaine place, with the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases: 18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed. 19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all. 20 And hee lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and sayd, Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God. 21 Blessed are ye that hunger nowe: for ye shalbe satisfied: blessed are ye that weepe now: for ye shall laugh. 22 Blessed are ye when men hate you, and when they separate you, and reuile you, and put out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake. 23 Reioyce ye in that day, and be glad: for beholde, your reward is great in heauen: for after this maner their fathers did to the Prophets. 24 But wo be to you that are rich: for ye haue receiued your consolation. 25 Wo be to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo
be to you that now laugh: for ye shall wayle and weepe. 26 Wo be to you when all men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets. 27 But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies: doe well to them which hate you. 28 Blesses them that curse you, and pray for them which hurt you. 29 And vnto him that smiteth thee on ye one cheeke, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coate also. 30 Giue to every man that asketh of thee: and of him that taketh away the things that be thine, ask them not againe. 31 And as ye would that men should doe to you, so doe ye to them likewise. 32 For if yee loue them which loue you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euene the sinners loue those that loue them. 33 And if ye do good for them which do good for you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euene the sinners doe the same. 34 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receiue, what thanke shall yee haue? for euene the sinners lend to sinners, to receiue the like. 35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, and doe good, and lend, looking for nothing againe, and your rewarde shalbe great, and ye shalbe the children of the most High: for he is kinde vnto the vnkinde, and to the euill. 36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull. 37 Judge not, and ye shalbe not be judged: condemne not, and ye shall not bee condemned: forgiue, and ye shalbe forgien. 38 Giue, and it shalbe giuen vnto you: a good measure, pressed downe, shaken together and running ouer shall men giue into your bosome: for with what measure ye mete, with the same shall men mete to you againe. 39 And he spake a parable vnto them, Can the blinde leade the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditche? 40 The disciple is not aboue his master: but whosoeuer will be a perfect disciple, shall bee as his master. 41 And why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and consid-erest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? 42 Either howe canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, and then shalt thou see, perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye. 43 For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruite: neither an euill tree, that bringeth forth good fruite. 44 For euery tree is knowne by his owne fruite: for neither of thornes gather men figges, nor of bushes gather they grapes. 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good, and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. 46 But why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things that I speake? 47 Whosoever commeth to mee, and heareth my wordes, and doeth the same, I will shewe you to whom he is like: 48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and layde the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and coulde not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke. 49 But hee that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

7

1 When hee had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. 2 And a certaine Ceturions servant was sicke and readie to die, which was deare vnto him. 3 And when he heard of Iesus, hee sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he would come, and heale his servaunt. 4 So they came to Iesus, and besought him instantly, saying that hee was worthy that hee should doe this for him:
5 For he loueth, said they, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.
6 Then Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my rooфе: 7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say the word, and my seruant shalbe whole: 8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder mee souldiers, and I say vnto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and hee commeth: and to my servant, Doe this, and he doeth it. 9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled at him, and turned him, and said to the people, that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel. 10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house, they founde the seruant that was sicke, whole. 11 And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 Nowe when hee came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, who was the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widowe, and much people of the citie was with her. 13 And when the Lord sawe her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not. 14 And he went and touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stoode still) and he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and he deliuered him to his mother. 16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people. 17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Iудеa, and throughout all the region round about. 18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things. 19 So Iohn called vnto him two cermayne men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another? 20 And when the men were come vnto him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another? 21 And at that time, he cured many of their sicknesses, and plagues, and of euill spirites, and vnto many blinde men he gaue sight freely. 22 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Goe your wayes and shewe Iohn, what things ye haue seene and heard: that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, and the poore receiue the Gospel. 23 And blessed is hee, that shall not be offended in me. 24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, hee began to speake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde? 25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? beholde, they which are gorgeously appareled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courtes. 26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet. 27 This is he of whom it is written, Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. 28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuerthelesse, hee that is the least in the kingdom of God, is greater then he. 29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn. 30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Law despised the counsell of God against themselues, and were not baptized of him. 31 And the Lord saide, Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what thing are they like vnto? 32 They are like vnto little children sitting in the market place, and
to kisse my feete. 46 Mine head with oyle thou didest not anoint: but she hath anoynted my feete with oyntment. 47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgien her: for she loued much. To whom a little is forgien, he doeth loue a little. 48 And he saide vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgien thee. 49 And they that sate at table with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that euen forgiueth sinnes? 50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: goe in peace.

8

1 And it came to passe afterwarde, that hee himselfe went through euery citie and towne, preaching and publishing the kingdome of God, and the twelue were with him, 2 And certaine women, which were healed of euill spirites, and inffirmities, as Mary which was called Magdalene, out of whom went seuen deuils, 3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance. 4 Nowe when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable. 5 A sower went out to sowe his seeede, and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of heauen deououred it vp. 6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprong vp, it withered away, because it lacked moystnesse. 7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it. 8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp, and bare fruite, an hundreth fold. And as hee sayd these things, he cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. 9 Then his disciples asked him, demaunding what parable that was. 10 And he sayd, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secrets of ye kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when they see, they should not see, and when they heare, they should
not vnderstand. 11 The parable is this, The seede is the worde of God. 12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: afterward commeth the deuill, and taketh away the worde out of their hearts, least they should beleue, and be saued. 13 But they that are on the stones, are they which when they haue heard, receiue ye word with joy: but they haue no rootes: which for a while beleue, but in the time of tentation goe away. 14 And that which fell among thrones, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruite. 15 But that which fell in good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart heare the worde, and keepe it, and bring forth fruite with patience. 16 No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a vessell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a candlestick, that they that enter in, may see the light. 17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be euident: neither any thing hid, that shall not be knowne, and come to light. 18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: for whosoever hath, to him shall be giuen: and whosoever hath not, from him shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth that he hath. 19 Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come neere to him for the preasse. 20 And it was tolde him by certaine which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee. 21 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, My mother and my brethren are these which heare the worde of God, and doe it. 22 And it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a ship with his disciples, and he sayd vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake. And they lanched forth. 23 And as they sayled, he fell a sleepe, and there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardie. 24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the waues of water: and they ceased, and it was calme. 25 Then he sayde vnto them, Where is your fayth? and they feared, and wondered among them selues, saying, Who is this that commandeth both the windes and water, and they obey him! 26 So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile. 27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues. 28 And when he sawe Iesus, he cryed out and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce sayd, What haue I to doe with thee, Jesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not. 29 For he commanded ye foule spirit to come out of the man: (for oft times he had caught him: therefore he was bound with chaines, and kept in fetters: but he brake the bands, and was caried of the deuill into wildernesses.) 30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he sayd, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him. 31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to goe out into the deepe. 32 And there was there by, an hearde of many swine, feeding on an hill: and the deuils besought him, that he would suffer them to enter into them. So he suffered them. 33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the hearde was caried with violence from a steepe downe place into the lake, and was choked. 34 When the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie and in the countrey. 35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed,
and in his right minde: and they were afraied. 36 They also which saw it, tolde them by what meane he that was possessed with the deuill, was healed. 37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, besought him that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, and returned. 38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that hee might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying, 39 Returne into thine owne house, and shewe what great things God hath done to thee. So hee went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great things Iesus had done vnto him. 40 And it came to passe, when Iesus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him. 41 And beholde, there came a man named Iaerus, and he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that he would come into his house. 42 For he had but a daughter onely, about twelve yeeres of age, and she lay a dying (and as he went, the people thronged him. 43 And a woman hauing an yssue of blood, twelue yeeres long, which had spent all her substance vpon physicians, and could not be healed of any: 44 When she came behind him, she touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her yssue of blood stanched. 45 Then Iesus sayde, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied, Peter sayd and they that were with him, Master, the multitude thrust thee, and tread on thee, and sayest thou, Who hath touched me? 46 And Iesus sayde, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me. 47 When the woman sawe that she was not hid, she came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly. 48 And he

said vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath saued thee: go in peace.) 49 While he yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, which sayde to him, Thy daughter is dead: disease not the Master. 50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: beleue onely, and she shall be saued. 51 And when he went into the house, he suffered no man to goe in with him, saue Peter, and James, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maide. 52 And all wept, and sorowed for her: but he sayd, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepe. 53 And they taught him to scorne, knowing that she was dead. 54 So he thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and cryed, saying, Maide, arise. 55 And her spirite came againe, and she rose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate. 56 Then her parents were astonied: but hee commanded them that they should tell no man what was done.

9

1 Then called hee his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to heale diseases. 2 And hee sent them foorth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke. 3 And he sayd to them, Take nothing to your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates apiece. 4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. 5 And howe many so euer will not receiue you, when ye goe out of that citie, shake off the very dust from your feete for a testimonie against them. 6 And they went out, and went through euery towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where. 7 Nowe Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, because that it was sayd of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead: 8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and
of some, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe. 9 Then Herod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whom I heare such things? and he desired to see him. 10 And when the Apostles returned, they tolde him what great things they had done. Then he toke them to him, and went aside into a solitarie place, neere to the citie called Bethsaida. 11 But when the people knewe it, they followed him: and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed. 12 And when the day began to weare away, the twelue came, and sayd vnto him, Sende the people away, that they may goe into the townes and villages round about, and lodge, and get meate: for we are here in a desart place. 13 But he sayd vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they sayd, We haue no more but five loaues and two fishes, except we should go and buy meate for all this people. 14 For they were about five thousand men. Then he sayde to his disciples, Cause them to sit downe by fifties in a company. 15 And they did so, and caused all to sit downe. 16 Then he tooke the five loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples, to set before the people. 17 So they did all eate, and were satisfied: and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets full of broken meate. 18 And it came to passe, as hee was alone pray- ing, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? 19 They answered, and sayd, Iohn Baptist: and others say, Elias: and some say, that one of the olde Prophets is risen againe. 20 And he sayd vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answered, and sayd, That Christ of God. 21 And he warned and commanded them, that they should tell that to no man, 22 Saying, The Sonne of man must suffer many things and be reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests and Scribes, and be slaine, and the third day rise againe. 23 And he sayd to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himselfe, and take vp his crosse dayly, and follow me. 24 For whosoever will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it. 25 For what auantageith a man, if he win the whole worlde, and destroy himselfe, or lose himselfe? 26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my wordes, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when hee shall come in his glorie, and in the glorie of the Father, and of the holy Angels. 27 And I tell you of a suretie, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God. 28 And it came to passe about an eyght dayes after those wordes, that he tooke Peter and Iohn, and James, and went vp into a mountaine to pray. 29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment was white and glistered. 30 And beholde, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias: 31 Which appeared in glory, and tolde of his departing, which he shoulde accomplish at Hierusalem. 32 But Peter and they that were with him, were haue with sleepe, and when they awoke, they saw his glorie, and the two men standing with him. 33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Jesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs there-fore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said. 34 Whiles he thus spake, there came a cloude and ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloude. 35 And there came a voyce out of the cloud, saying, This is that my beloved Sonne, heare him. 36 And when the voyce was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes.
any of those things which they had seen. 37 And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him. 38 And beholde, a man of the companie cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, beholde my sonne: for he is all that I haue. 39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and he teareth him, that he cometh, and hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him. 40 Nowe I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not. 41 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse, and crooked, howe long nowe shall I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither. 42 And whiles he was yet coming, the deuill rent him, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirite, and healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father. 43 And they were all amased at the mightie power of God: and while they all wondered at al things, which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples, 44 Marke these worde diligently: for it shall come to passe, that the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the handes of men. 45 But they vnderstood not that word: for it was hid from them, so that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aske him of that worde. 46 Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest. 47 When Iesus sawe the thoughtes of their heartes, he tooke a little childe, and set him by him, 48 And said vnto them, Whosoever receiueth this little childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoever shall receiue me, receiueeth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, he shall be great. 49 And Iohn answered and saide, Master, we sawe one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbad him, because he followeth thee not with vs. 50 Then Iesus saide vnto him, Forbid ye him not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs. 51 And it came to passe, when the dayes were accomplished, that he should be receiued vp, he setted himselfe fully to goe to Hierusalem, 52 And sent messengers before him: and they went and entred into a towne of the Samaritans, to prepare him lodging. 53 But they woulde not receiue him, because his behauiour was, as though he would go to Hierusalem. 54 And when his disciples, James and Iohn sawe it, they saide, Lord, wilt thou that we commaund, that fire come downe from heauen, and consume them, euen as Elias did? 55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and said, Ye knowe not of what spirit ye are. 56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne. 57 And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man said vnto him, I will follow thee, Lord, whithersoever thou goest. 58 And Iesus saide vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birdes of the heauen nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head. 59 But he said vnto another, Followe me. And the same said, Lord, suffer me first to goe and burie my father. 60 And Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead burie their dead: but go thou, and preache the kingdome of God. 61 Then another saide, I will follow thee, Lord: but let me first goe and bid them farewell, which are at mine house. 62 And Iesus saide vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

10

1 After these things, the Lord appointed other seuentie also, and sent them, two and two before him into euery citie and place, whither he himselfe should come. 2 And he said vnto them, The haruest is great, but the labourers are fewe: pray therefore the Lord of the haruest to sende foorth labourers into his haruest. 3 Goe your wayes: beholde, I send
you forth as lambs among wolves. 4 Beare no bagge, neither scripppe, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way. 5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. 6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not, it shall turne to you againe. 7 And in that house tary still, eating and drinking such things as by them shall be set before you: for the labourer is worthy of his wages. Goe not from house to house. 8 But into whatsoever citie ye shall enter, if they receive you, eate such things as are set before you, 9 And heale the sickle that are there, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you. 10 But into whatsoever citie ye shall enter, if they will not receive you, goe your wayes out into the streetes of the same, and say, 11 Euen the very dust, which cleaueth on vs of your citie, we wipe off against you: notwithstanding knowe this, that the kingdome of God was come neere vnto you. 12 For I say to you, that it shall be easier in that day for them of Sodom, then for that citie. 13 Woe be to thee, Chorazin: woe be to thee, Beth-saida: for if the miracles had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue bene done in you, they had a great while agone repented, sitting in sackecloth and ashes. 14 Therefore it shall be easier for Tyrus, and Sidon, at the judgement, then for you. 15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell. 16 He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me. 17 And the seuentie turned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subdued to vs through thy Name. 18 And he said vnto them, I sawe Satan, like lightening, fall downe from heauen. 19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to tredde on Serpents, and Scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie, and nothing shall hurt you. 20 Neuerthelesse, in this rejoyce not, that the spirits are subdued vnto you: but rather rejoyce, because your names are written in heauen. 21 That same houre rejoyced Iesus in the spirit, and said, I confesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and vnderstanding, and hast reuelleed them to babes: euen so, Fa- ther, because it so pleased thee. 22 All things are giuen of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: neither who the Father is, saue the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reuelle him. 23 And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly, Blessed are the eyes, which see that ye see. 24 For I tell you that many Prophets and Kings haue desired to see those things, which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them. 25 Then beholde, a certayne Lawyer stooede vp, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I doe, to inherit eternall life? 26 And he saide vnto him, What is written in the Lawe? howe readeast thou? 27 And he answered, and said, Thou shalt loue thy Lord God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy thought, and thy neighbour as thy selfe. 28 Then he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe, and thou shalt liue. 29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour? 30 And Iesus answered, and said, A certayne man went downe from Hierusalem to Jericho, and fell among theeeues, and they robbed him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaung him halfe dead. 31 Nowe so it fell out, that there came downe a certaine Priest that same way, and when he sawe him, he passed by on the other side. 32 And likewise also a Leuite, when he was come neere to the place, went and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. 33 Then a cer- taine Samaritane, as he journeyed,
came neere vnto him, and when he sawe him, he had compassion on him, 34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle and wine, and put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him. 35 And on the morowe when he departed, he tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompense thee. 36 Which nowe of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues? 37 And he saide, He that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, and do thou likewise. 38 Nowe it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Marie, which also sate at Iesus feete, and heard his preaching. 40 But Martha was combred about much seruings, and came to him, and saide, Master, doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore, that she helpe me. 41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about many things: 42 But one thing is needefull, Marie hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

11 1 And so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teache vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples. 2 And he said vnto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy will be done, euens in earth, as it is in heauen: 3 Our dayly bread giue vs for the day: 4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euens we forgiue euery man that is indetted to vs: And leade vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euill. 5 Moreouer he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friende, and shall goe to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friende, lende mee three loaues? 6 For a friende of mine is come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing to set before him: 7 And hee within shoulde answere, and say, Trouble mee not: the doore is nowe shut, and my children are with mee in bed: I can not rise and giue them to thee. 8 I say vnto you, Though he would not arise and giue him, because he is his friende, yet doubtlesse because of his impor-tunitie, hee woulde rise, and giue him as many as he needed. 9 And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall be giuen you: seeke, and yee shall finde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you. 10 For every one that asketh, receiuethe: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened. 11 If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? or if hee aske a fish, will he for a fish giue him a serpent? 12 Or if hee aske an egge, will he giue him a scorpion? 13 If yee then which are euill, can giue good giftes vnto your children, howe much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost to them, that desire him? 14 Then hee cast out a deuill which was domme: and when the deuill was gone out, the domme spake, and the people wondered. 15 But some of them said, He casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of ye deuils. 16 And others tempted him, seeking of him a signe from heauen. 17 But he knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, Every kingdom deuided against it self, shall be desolate, and an house deuided against an house, falleth. 18 So if Satan also bee deuided against himselfe, howe shall his kingdome stande, because yee say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub? 19 If I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whome doe your children cast them out? Therefore shall they be your judges. 20 But if I by ye finger of God cast out
deuils, doubtles the kingdom of God is come vnto you. 21 When a strong man armed kepth his palace, the thinges that hee possesseth, are in peace. 22 But when a stronger then hee, commeth vpon him, and overcommeth him: hee taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and deuideth his spoiles. 23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth. 24 When the vncleane spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when he findeth none he saith, I will returne vnto mine house whence I came out. 25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished. 26 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seuen other spirites worse then himselfe: and they enter in, and dwel there: so the last state of that man is worse then the first. 27 And it came to passe as he sayde these thinges, a certaine woman of the companie lifted vp her voyce, and sayde vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the pappes which thou hast sucked. 28 But hee saide, Yea, rather blessed are they that heare the woorde of God, and keepe it. 29 And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of Ionas the Prophet. 30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Ninuities: so shall also the Sonne of man bee to this generation. 31 The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for shee came from the ytmost partes of the earth to heare the wisedome of Salomon, and beholde, a greater then Salomon is here. 32 The men of Niniuë shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas: and beholde, a greater then Ionas is here. 33 No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnnder a bushell: but on a candle-sticke, that they which come in, may see the light. 34 The light of the bodie is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole bodie light: but if thine eye be euill, then thy bodie is darke. 35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse. 36 If therefore thy whole body shall be light, haung no part darke, then shall all be light, even as when a candle doth light thee with the brightnesse. 37 And as hee spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and hee went in, and sate downe at table. 38 And when the Pharise saw it, he maruellled that he had not first washed before dinner. 39 And the Lord saide to him, In deede yee Pharises make cleane the outside of the cuppe, and of the platter: but the inwarde part is full of rauening and wickednesse. 40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? 41 Therefore, giue almes of those thinges which you haue, and beholde, all thinges shall be cleane to you. 42 But wo be to you, Pharises: for ye tithe the mynt and the rewe, and all maner herbs, and passe ouer iudgement and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and not to haue left the other vndone. 43 Wo be to you, Pharises: for ye loue the vp-ermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. 44 Wo be to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them, perceiue not. 45 Then answered one of the Lawyers, and saide vnto him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also. 46 And he sayde, Wo be to you also, yee Lawyers: for yee lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and yee your selues touche not the burdens with one of your fingers. 47 Wo be to you: for ye builde the sepulchres of the Prophetes, and your fathers killed them. 48 Truely ye beare witnesse, and allowe the deedes of your fathers: for they killed
them, and yee build their sepulchres. 49 Therefore said the wisedome of God, I wil sende them Prophets and Apostles, and of them they shall slaye, and persecute away, 50 That the blood of all the Prophets, shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation, 51 From the blood of Abel vnto the blood of Zacharias, which was slaine betweene the altar and the Temple: verely I say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation. 52 Wo be to you, Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade. 53 And as he sayde these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things, 54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to cattche some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

12 1 In the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, so that they trode one another: and he began to say vnto his disciples first, Take heede to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisy. 2 For there is nothing couered, that shall not bee reueiled: neither hidde, that shall not be known. 3 Wherefore whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in darkenesse, it shall be heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, in secret places, shall be preached on the houses. 4 And I say vnto you, my friends, be not afeafe of them that kill the bodie, and after that are not able to doe any more. 5 But I wil forewarne you, who ye shall feare: feare him which after hee hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you, him feare. 6 Are not fife sparowes bought for two farthings, and yet not one of them is forgotten before God? 7 Yea, and all the heares of your head are nombred: feare not therefore: yee are more of value then many sparowes. 8 Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse mee before men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God. 9 But hee that shall denie mee before men, shall be denied before the Angels of God. 10 And whosoeuer shall speake a woorde against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgien him: but vnto him, that shall blaspheme ye holy Ghost, it shall not be forgien. 11 And when they shall bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and Princes, take no thought howe, or what thing ye shall answere, or what yee shall speake. 12 For the holy Ghost shall teache you in the same houre, what yee ought to say. 13 And one of the companie said vnto him, Master, bidde my brother deuide the inheritance with me. 14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a deuider ouer you? 15 Wherefore he said vnto them, Take heede, and beware of couetousnesse: for though a man haue abundance, yet his life standeth not in his riches. 16 And he put foorth a parable vnto them, saying, The gronde of a certaine riche man brought fourth fruites plentifully. 17 Therefore he thought with himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no roume, where I may lay vp my fruites? 18 And he said, This wil I do, I wil pul downe my barnes, and builde greater, and therein will I gather all my fruites, and my goods. 19 And I wil say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods laide vp for many yeeres: liue at ease, eate, drinke and take thy pastime. 20 But God said vnto him, O foole, this night wil they fetch away thy soule from thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast prouided? 21 So is he that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not riche in God. 22 And he spake vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, Take no thought for your life, what yee shall eate: neither
for your body, what yee shall put on. 23 The life is more then meate: and the body more then the raiment.
24 Consider the rauens: for they nei-
ther sowe nor reap: which neither
haue storehouse nor barne, and yet
God feedeth them: how much more
are yee better then foules? 25 And
which of you with taking thought, can
adde to his stature one cubite? 26 If
yee then bee not able to doe the least
thing, why take yee thought for the
remnant? 27 Consider the lilies howe
they growe: they labour not, neither
spin they: yet I say vnto you, that Salomon himselfe in all his royaltie
was not clothed like one of these. 28If
then God so clothe the grasse which
is to day in the field, and to morowe is
cast into the ouen, howe much more
will he clothe you, O yee of little faith?
29 Therefore aske not what yee shall
eate, or what yee shall drinke, neither
hag you in suspense. 30 For all such
tings the people of the world seeke
for: and your Father knoweth that ye
haue neede of these things. 31 But
rather seeke ye after the kingdome of God, and all these things shalbe
cast vpon you. 32 Feare not, little
flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure,
to giue you the kingdome. 33 Sell that
ye haue, and giue almes: make you
bagges, which waxe not old, a trea-
sure that can never fail in heaven,
where no theefe commeth, neither
mothe corrupteth. 34 For where your
treasure is, there will your hearts be
also. 35 Let your loynes be gird about
and your lights burning. 36 And ye
your selues like vnto men that waite
for their master, when he will re-
turne from the wedding, that when
he commeth and knocketh, they may
open vnto him immediatly. 37 Blessed
are those seruants, whom the Lord
when he commeth shall finde wak-
ing: verely I say vnto you, he will
girde himselfe about, and make them
to sit downe at table, and will come
forth, and serue them. 38 And if he
come in the seconde watch, or come
in the third watch, and shall finde
them so, blessed are those seruants.
39 Nowe vnderstand this, that if the
good man of the house had knowen
at what houre the theefe would haue
come, he would haue watched, and
would not haue suffered his house
to be digged through. 40 Be ye also
prepared therefore: for the Sonne of
man will come at an houre when ye
thinke not. 41 Then Peter saide vnto
him, Master, tellst thou this parable
vnto vs, or even to all? 42 And the
Lord saide, Who is a faithfull stew-
ard and wise, whom the master shall
make ruler ouer his householde, to
giue them their portion of meate in
season? 43 Blessed is that seruant,
whom his master when he commeth,
shall finde so doing. 44 Of a trueth I
say vnto you, that he wil make him
ruler ouer all that he hath. 45 But
if that seruant say in his heart, My
master doeth deferre his comming,
and ginne to smite the seruants, and
maydens, and to eate, and drinke, and
to be drunken, 46 The master of that
seruant will come in a day when he
thinketh not, and at an houre when
he is not ware of, and will cut him
off, and giue him his portion with
the vnbeleeuers. 47 And that seruant
that kneved his masters will, and pre-
pared not himselfe, neither did ac-
cording to his will, shalbe beaten with
many stripes. 48 But he that knewe it
not, and yet did commit things wor-
thy of stripes, shall be beaten with
eewe stripes: for vnto whomsoeuer
much is giuen, of him shalbe much
required, and to whom men much
commit, the more of him will they
aske. 49 I am come to put fire on the
earth, and what is my desire, if it be
already kindled? 50 Notwithstanding
I must be baptized with a baptisme,
and how am I grieued, till it be ended?
51 Thinke ye that I am come to giue
peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but
rather debate. 52 For from hence-
foorth there shall be fiue in one house
deuied, three against two, and two
against three. 53 The father shalbe
deuided against ye sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in lawe against her daughter in lawe, and the daughter in lawe against her mother in lawe. 54 Then said he to the people, When ye see a cloude rise out of the West, straightway ye say, A shower commeth: and so it is. 55 And when ye see the South winde blowe, ye say, that it wilbe hoate: and it commeth to passe. 56 Hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why discerne ye not this time? 57 Yea, and why iudge ye not of your selues what is right? 58 While thou goest with thine aduersarie to the ruler, as thou art in the way, glue diligence in the way, that thou mayest be delivered from him, least he drawe thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and the iayler cast thee into prison. 59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost mite.

13

1 There were certaine men present at the same season, that shewed him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 2 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Suppose ye, that these Galileans were greater sinners then al the other Galileans, because they haue suffered such things? 3 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perish. 4 Or thinke you that those eighteene, vpon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slewe them, were sinners aboue all men that dwel in Hierusalem? 5 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perish. 6 He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figge tree planted in his vineyard: and he came and sought fruite thereon, and found none. 7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, this three yeeres haue I come and sought fruite of this figge tree, and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth it also the ground barren? 8 And he answered, and said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere also, till I digge round about it, and doung it. 9 And if it beare fruite, well: if not, then after thou shalt cut it downe. 10 And he taught in one of ye Synagogues on the Sabbath day. 11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eighteene yeeres, and was bowed together, and coulde not lift vp her selfe in any wise. 12 When Iesus sawe her, he called her to him, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease. 13 And he laide his handes on her, and imediately she was made straight againe, and glorified God. 14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus healed on the Sabbath day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day. 15 Then answered him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite, doth not eche one of you on the Sabbath day loose his oxe or his ass from the stall, and leade him away to the water? 16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, loe, eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day? 17 And when he said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but all the people rejoiced at all the excellent things, that were done by him. 18 Then said he, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shall I compare it? 19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grewe, and waxed a great tree, and the foules of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof. 20 And againe he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God? 21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three peckes of floure, till all was leauened. 22 And he went through all
Luke 13:23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there fewe that shalbe saued? And he said vnto them, Striue to enter in at the straie gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able. When the good man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shall answere and say vnto you, I know you not when ye are: Then shall ye begin to say, We haue eaten and drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes. But he shall say, I tell you, I knowe you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kyndome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores. Then shall come many from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit at Table in the kyndome of God. And beholde, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are first, which shalbe last. The same day there came certayne Pharises, and said vnto him, Depart, and goe hence: for Herod will kill thee. Then said he vnto them, Goe ye and tell that foxe, Beholde, I cast out deuils, and will heale still to day, and to morowe, and the third day I shalbe perfected. Neuerthelesse I must walke to day, and to morowe, and the day followinge: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem. O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her brood vnder her wings, and ye would not! Beholde, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see me vntill the time come that ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14

1 And it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath day, to eate bread, they watched him. 2 And beholde, there was a certayne man before him, which had the dropsie. Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day? 4 And they held their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe, And answered them, saying, Which of you shall haue an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and wil not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day? And they could not answere him againe to those things. He spake also a parable to the ghostes, when he marked howe they chose out the chiefe roomes, and said vnto them, When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selue downe in the chieapest place, lest a more honourable man then thou, be bidden of him, And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roome. But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee, cometh, he may say vnto thee, Friende, sit vp here: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee. For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shall be brought lowe, and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted. Then said he also to him that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor ye riche neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call ye poore, the maimed, the lame, and the blind, And thou shalt be blessed, because they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt
Luke 14:15

be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. 15 Nowe when one of them that sate at table, heard these things, he said vnto him, Blessed is he that eateth bread in the kingdom of God. 16 Then saide he to him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many. 17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are nowe readie. 18 But they all with one mind beganne to make excuse: The first saide vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I must needes goo out and see it: I pray thee, haue me excused. 19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goo to prowe them: I pray thee, haue me excused. 20 And another said, I haue maried a wife, and therefore I can not come. 21 So that seruant returned, and shewed his master these things. Then was the good man of the house angrie, and said to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde. 22 And the seruant saide, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roome. 23 Then the master sayd to the seruant, Goe out into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine house may bee filled. 24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper. 25 Nowe there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and sayd vnto them, 26 If any man come to mee, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters: yea, and his owne life also, he can not be my disciple. 27 And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and commeth after mee, can not bee my disciple. 28 For which of you minding to builde a towre, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether hee haue sufficient to performe it. 29 Lest that after he hath laide the foundation, and is not able to performe it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him, 30 Saying, This man began to builde, and was not able to make an end? 31 Or what King going to make warre against another King, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsell, whether he be able with ten thousand, to meeete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand? 32 Or els while he is yet a great way off, hee sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace. 33 So likewise, whosoeuer hee be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. 34 Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be salted? 35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for the dunghill, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

15

1 Then resorted vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, to heare him. 2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, Hee receiueth sinners, and eateth with them. 3 Then spake hee this parable to them, saying, 4 What man of you hauing an hundreth sheepe, if hee lose one of them, doeth not leauue nine and nine in the wildernesse, and goo after that which is lost, vntill he finde it? 5 And when he hath found it, he laieth it on his shoulders with ioye. 6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with mee: for I haue founde my sheepe which was lost. 7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioye shall be in heauen for one sinner that converte, more then for ninetie and nine iust men, which neede none amendment of life. 8 Either what woman hauing ten groates, if she lose one groate, doth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seeke diligently till shee finde it? 9 And when shee hath found it, shee calleth her friends and neighbours, saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the groate which I had lost. 10 Likewise I say
vnto you, there is joy in the presence of the Angels of God, for one sinner that conuerteth. 11 He sayde moreover, A certaine man had two sonsnes. 12 And the young of them sayde to his father, Father, giue mee the portion of the goods that falleth to mee. So he deuided vnto them his substance. 13 So not many daies after, when the young sonne had gathered all together, hee tooke his journey into a farre countrey, and there hee wasted his goods with riotous liuing. 14 Nowe when hee had spent all, there arose a great dearth throughout that land, and he began to be in necessities. 15 Then hee went and clame to a citizen of that countrey, and hee sent him to his farme, to feede swine. 16 And hee would faine haue filled his bellie with the huskes, that the swine ate: but no man gaue them him. 17 Then he came to him selfe, and said, Howe many hired seruaunts at my fathers haue bread ynoough, and I die for hunger? 18 I wil rise and goe to my father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heaue, and before thee, 19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruaunts. 20 So hee arose and came to his father, and when hee was yet a great way off, his father sawe him, and had compassion, and ranne and fell on his necke, and kissed him. 21 And the sonne sayde vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee, and am no more worthie to be called thy sonne. 22 Then the father said to his seruaunts, Bring foorth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feete, 23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let vs eate, and be merie: 24 For this my sonne was dead, and is alioe againe: and he was lost, but he is found. And they began to be merie. 25 Nowe the elder brother was in the fielde, and when he came and drewe neere to the house, he heard melodie, and dauncing, 26 And called one of his seruaunts, and asked what those things meant. 27 And hee sayde vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatte calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound. 28 Then he was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and entreated him. 29 But he answered and said to his father, Loe, these many yeeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I at any time thy commadement, and yet thou neuer gauest mee a kidde that I might make merie with my friends. 30 But when this thy sonne was come, which hath deououred thy good with harlots, thou hast for his sake killed the fat calfe. 31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and al that I haue, is thine. It was meete that we should make merie, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alioe againe: and hee was lost, but he is found.

16

1 And he sayde also vnto his discipes, There was a certaine riche man, which had a stewarde, and he was accused vnto him, that he wasted his goods. 2 And hee called him, and saide vnto him, Howe is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an accounts of thy stewardship: for thou maist be no longer steward. 3 Then the stewarde saide within himselfe, What shall I doe? for my master taketh away from me the stewardship. I cannot digge, and to begge I am ashamed. 4 I knowe what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue mee into their houses. 5 Then called he vnto him euery one of his masters deters, and said vnto the first, Howe much owest thou vnto my master? 6 And he said, An hundreth measures of wheate. And he saide to him, Take thy writing, and sitte downe quickly, and write fiftie. 7 Then said he to another, How much owest thou? And hee sayde, An hundreth measures of wheate. Then he saide to him, Take thy writing, and write foure
Luke 16:8

score. 8 And the Lord commended the vniust stewarde, because he had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this worlde are in their generation wiser then the children of light. 9 And I say vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when ye shall want, they may receiue you into everlasting habitations. 10 He that is faithfull in the least, hee is also faithful in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much. 11 If then ye haue not ben faithfull in another mans goods, who shall gluue you that which is yours? 12 No seruaunt can serue two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Yee can not serue God and riches. 14 All these things heard the Pharises also which were couetous, and they scoffed at him. 15 Then he sayde vnto them, Yee are they, which justifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your heartes: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God. 16 The Lawe and the Prophets endured vntill John: and since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and euery man preasseth into it. 17 Nowe it is more easie that heauen and earth shoulde passe away, then that one title of the Lawe should fall. 18 Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marieth another, committeth adulterie: and whosoever marieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adulterie. 19 There was a certaine riche man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared well and delicately euery day. 20 Also there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laide at his gate full of sores, 21 And desired to bee refreshed with the crommes that fell from the riche mans table: yea, and the dogges came and licked his sores. 22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried. 23 And being in hell in tormentes, he lift vp his eyes, and sawe Abraham a farre off, and Lazarus in his bosome. 24 Then he cried, and saide, Father Abraham, haue mercie on mee, and sende Lazarus that hee may dippe the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receuuest thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus paines: now therefore is he comforted, and thou art tormented. 26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would goe from hence to you, can not: neither can they come from thence to vs. 27 Then he said, I pray thee therfore, father, that thou wouldest sende him to my fathers house, 28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that he may testifie vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment. 29 Abraham said vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them. 30 And he sayde, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will amend their liues. 31 Then he said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rise from the dead againe.

Luke 17:4

1 Then said he to his disciples, It can not be auidoed, but that offences will come, but wo be to him by whome they come. 2 It is better for him that a great milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into ye sea, then that he should offende one of these litel ones. 3 Take heed to your selues: if thy brother trespasseth against thee, rebuke him: and if hee repent, forgive him. 4 And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth
mee, thou shalt forgive him. 5 And
the Apostles saide vnto the Lord, In-
crease our faith. 6 And the Lord said,
If ye had faith, as much as is a graine
of mustard seede, and should say vnto
this mulberie tree, Plucke thy selfe
vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe
in the sea, it should euuen obey you.
7 Who is it also of you, that hauing
a seruant plowing or feeding cattell,
would say vnto him by and by, when
hee were come from the fielde, Goe,
and sit downe at table? 8 And woulde
not rather say to him, Dresse where-
with I may suppe, and girde thy selfe,
and serue mee, till I haue eaten and
drunk, and afterward eate thou,
and drinke thou? 9 Doeth he thanke
that seruant, because hee did that
which was commanded vnto him? I
trowe not. 10 So likewise yee, when
yee haue done all those things, which
are commanded you, say, We are vn-
profitable seruants: wee haue done
that which was our dutie to doe.
11 And so it was when he went to
Hierusalem, that he passed through
the middles of Samaria, and Galile.
12 And as hee entred into a certaine
towne, there met him tenne men that
were lepers, which stooed a farre off.
13 And they lift vp their voyces and
saide, Iesus, Master, haue mercie on
vs. 14 And when he saw them, he said
vnto them, Goe, shewe your selues
vnto the Priestes.  And it came to
passe, that as they went, they were
clensed. 15 Then one of them, when
hee sawe that hee, was healed, turned
bacce, and with a loude voyce praised
God, 16 And fell downe on his face
at his feete, and gaue him thankes:
and he was a Samaritan. 17 And Iesus
answered, and said, Are there not
tenne clensed? but where are the
nine? 18 There is none founde that
returned to giue God praise, saue this
stranger. 19 And he saide vnto him,
Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath
saued thee. 20 And when hee was
demanded of the Pharisees, when the
kingdome of God shoulde come, he
answered them, and said, The king-
dome of God commeth not with ob-
eration. 21 Neither shall men say,
Loe here, or lo there: for behold, the
kingdome of God is within you. 22 And
he saide vnto the disciples, The dayes
will come, when ye shall desire to
see one of the dayes of the Sonne of
man, and ye shall not see it. 23 Then
they shall say to you, Behold here, or
helpole there: but goe not thither,
neither follow them. 24 For as the
lightening that lighteneth out of the
one part vnder heauen, shineth vnto
the other part vnder heauen, so shall
the Sonne of man be in his day. 25 But
first must he suffer many things,
and be reprooued of this generation.
26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so
shall it be in the dayes of the Sonne
of man. 27 They ate, they dranke,
they married wiues, and gaue in mar-
riage vnto the day that Noe went
into the Arke: and the flood came,
and destroyed them all. 28 Likewise
also, as it was in the dayes of Lot:
they ate, they dranke, they bought,
they solde, they planted, they built.
29 But in the day that Lot went out of
Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone
from heauen, and destroyed them all.
30 After these ensamples shall it be
in the day when the Sonne of man
is reueiled. 31 At that day hee that
is vpon the house, and his stuffe in
ye house, let him not come downe to
take it out: and he that is in the fielde
likewise, let him not turne backe to
that he left behinde. 32 Remember
Lots wife. 33 Whosoeuer will seeke
to saue his soule, shall loose it: and
whosoeuer shall loose it, shall get it
life. 34 I tell you, in that night there
shall be two in one bed: the one
shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe
left. 35 Two women shalbe grinding
together: the one shalbe taken, and
the other shalbe left. 36 Two shalbe
in the fielde: one shalbe receiued,
and another shalbe left. 37 And they
answered, and saide to him, Where,
Lord? And he said vnto them, Where-
soeuer the body is, thither shall also
the eagles bee gathered together.

18

1 And he spake also a parable vnto them, to this ende, that they ought al-
wayes to pray, and not to waxe faint, 2 Saying, There was a judge in a cer-
taine citie, which feared not God, nei-
ther reuereced man. 3 And there was a widowe in that citie, which came vnto him, saying, Doe mee justice against mine aduersarie. 4 And hee 
would not of a long time: but after-
ward he said with himselfe, Though 
I feare not God, nor reuereence man,
5 Yet because this widowe troublesh 
mee, I will doe her right, lest at the 
last shee come and make me wareie. 
6 And the Lord said, Heare what the 
vrighteous judge saith. 7 Now shall 
not God auenge his elect, which cry 
day and night vnto him, yea, though 
he suffer long for them? 8 I tell you he 
will auenge them quickly: but when 
the Sonne of man commeth, shall he 
finde faith on the earth? 9 He spake 
also this parable vnto certaine which 
thrust in themselves that they were 
just, and despised other. 10 Two men 
went vp into the Temple to pray: the 
one a Pharise, and the other a Publi-
can. 11 The Pharise stooode and prayed 
thus with himselfe, O God, I thanke 
thee that I am not as other men, ex-
tortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen 
as this Publican. 12 I fast-twice in the 
weke: I gie tithe of all that euere I 
possesse. 13 But the Publican standing 
a farre off, woulde not lift vp so much 
as his eyes to heauen, but smote his 
brest, saying, O God, be mercifull to 
me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man 
departed to his house justified, rather 
than the other: for every man that 
exalteth himselfe, shall be brought 
lowe, and he that humbleth himselfe, 
shalbe exalted. 15 They brought vnto 
him also babes that he should touche 
them. And when his disciples sawe it, 
they rebuked them. 16 But Iesus called 
them vnto him, and said, Suffer the 
babes to come vnto mee, and forbid 
them not: for of such is the kingdome 
of God. 17 Verely I say vnto you, 
whosoever receiueth not the king-
dome of God as a babe, he shall not 
enter therein. 18 Then a certaine ruler 
asked him, saying, Good Master, what 
ought I to doe, to inherit eternity life? 19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why 
callest thou me good? none is good, 
saue one, euen God. 20 Thou knowest 
the comandements, Thou shalt not 
commit adulterie: Thou shalt not kill: 
Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not 
beare false witnes: Honour thy father 
and thy mother. 21 And hee saide, 
All these haue I kept from my youth. 
22 Nowe when Iesus heard that, he 
saide vnto him, Yet lackest thou one 
thing. Sell all that euere thou hast, 
and distribute vnto the poore, and 
shalte haue treasure in heauen, 
and come follow mee. 23 But when 
he heard those things, he was very 
heauie: for he was maruellous riche. 
24 And when Iesus sawe him very 
sorrowfull, he said, With what difficul-
tie shall they that haue riches, enter 
into the kingdome of God! 25 Surely 
it is easier for a camel to go through 
a needles eye, then for a riche man 
to enter into the kingdome of God. 
26 Then said they that heard it, And 
who then can be saued? 27 And he 
said, The things which are vnpossi-
ble with men, are possible with God. 
28 Then Peter said, Loe, we haue left 
all, and haue followed thee. 29 And he 
saide vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, 
there is no man that hath left house, 
or parents, or brethren, or wife, or 
children for the kingdome of Gods 
sake, 30 Which shall not receive much 
more in this world, and in the world 
to come life euerlasting. 31 Then 
Iesus tooke vnto him ye twelue, and 
saide vnto them, Beholde, we goe vp 
to Hierusalem, and all things shalbe 
fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are 
written by the Prophets. 32 For he 
shall be deliuere vnto the Gentiles, 
and shalbe mocked, and shalbe spite-
fully entreated, and shalbe spitted on. 
33 And when they haue scourged him, 
they will put him to death: but the
thirde day hee shall rise againe. 34 But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hidde from them, neither perceiued they the things, which were spoken. 35 And it came to passe, that as he was come neere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate by the way side, begging. 36 And when he heard the people passe by, he asked what it meant. 37 And they saide vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by. 38 Then hee cried, saying, Iesus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. 39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he shoulde holde his peace, but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. 40 And Iesus stooede stil, and commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come neere, he asked him, 41 Saying, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight. 42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee. 43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praysing God: and all the people, when they sawe this, gaue praise to God.

19

1 Now when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho, 2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was riche. 3 And he sought to see Iesus, who hee should be, and coulde not for the preasse, because he was of a lowe stature. 4 Wherefore he ranne before, and climed vp into a wilde figge tree, that he might see him: for he should come that way. 5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to day I must abide at thine house. 6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him joyfully. 7 And when all they sawe it, they murmured, saying, that hee was gone in to lodge with a sinfull man. 8 And Zaccheus stood forth, and said vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure foldes. 9 Then Iesus said to him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as hee is also become the sonne of Abraham. 10 For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost. 11 And whiles they heard these things, hee continued and spake a parable, because hee was neere to Hierusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdom of God should shortly appeare. 12 He saide therefore, A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and so to come againe. 13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, and sayd vnto them, Occupie till I come. 14 Nowe his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not haue this man to regaine ouer vs. 15 And it came to passe, when hee was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commanded the seruants to be called to him, to whome he gaue his money, that he might knowe what every man had gained. 16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy piece hath encreased ten pieces. 17 And he sayd vnto him, Well, good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very little thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities. 18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy piece hath encreased five pieces. 19 And to the same he sayd, Be thou also ruler ouer five cities. 20 So the other came, and sayd, Lord, beholde thy piece, which I haue laide vp in a napkin: 21 For I feared thee, because thou art a straight man: thou takest vp, that thou layest not downe, and receapest that thou diddest not sowe. 22 Then he sayde vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I judge thee, O euill seruant. Thou knewest that I am a straight man, taking vp that I layd not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe. 23 Wherefore then gauest not
thou my money into the banke, that at my coming I might haue required it with vantage? 24 And he sayd to them that stoode by, Take from him that piece, and glue it him that hath ten pieces. 25 (And they sayd vnto him, Lord, hee hath ten pieces.) 26 For I say vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it shalbe giuen: and from him that hath not, even that he hath, shalbe taken from him. 27 Moreover, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me. 28 And when he had thus spoken, he went forth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem. 29 And it came to passe, when hee was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is called the mount of Olues, he sent two of his disciples, 30 Saying, Goe ye to the towne which is before you, wherein, assoone as ye are come, ye shall finde a colte tied, whereon nouer man sate: loose him, and bring him hither. 31 And if any man aske you, why ye loose him, thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath neede of him. 32 So they that were sent, went their way, and found it as he had sayd vnto them. 33 And as they were loosing the colte, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose ye the colte? 34 And they sayd, The Lord hath neede of him. 35 So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast their garments on the colte, and set Iesus thereon. 36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the way. 37 And when he was nowe come neere to the going downe of the mount of Olues, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce, and to prayse God with a loude voyce, for all the great workes that they had seene, 38 Saying, Blessed be the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glory in the highest places. 39 Then some of the Pharises of the companie sayd vnto him, Master, rebuke thy discipies. 40 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, I tell you, that if these should holde their peace, the stones would crie. 41 And when he was come neere, he behelde the Citie, and wept for it, 42 Saying, O if thou haddest euern known at the least in this thy day those things, which belong vnto thy peace! but nowe are they hid from thine eyes. 43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side, 44 And shall make thee euene with ye ground, and thy children which are in thee, and they shall not leaue in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season of thy visitation. 45 He went also into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought, 46 Saying vnto them, It is written, Mine house is the house of prayer, but ye haue made it a denne of theeuens. 47 And he taught dayly in the Temple. And the hie Priests and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him. 48 But they could not finde what they might doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

20

1 And it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the hie Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders, 2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie thou doest these things, or who is hee that hath giuen thee this authoritie? 3 And he answered, and sayde vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore: 4 The baptism of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? 5 And they reasoned within themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleewed ye him not? 6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet. 7 Therefore they answered, that they
could not tell whence it was. 8 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I doe these things. 9 Then began he to speake to ye people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyarde, and let it forth to husbandmen: and went into a strange countrey, for a great time. 10 And at the time conveniente he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruite of the vineyarde: but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away emptie. 11 Againe he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate him, and foule entreated him, and sent him away emptie. 12 Moreouer he sent the third, and him they wounded, and cast out. 13 Then sayd the Lord of the vineyarde, What shall I doe? I will send my beloved sonne: it may be that they will doe reuereence, when they see him. 14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. 15 So they cast him out of the vineyarde, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyarde therefore doe vnto them? 16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyarde to others. But when they heard it, they sayd, God forbid. 17 And he beheld them, and said, What meaneth this then that is written, The stone that the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner? 18 Whoseoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shall be broken: and on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to puder. 19 Then the hie Priestes, and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hands on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them. 20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should faine themselves lust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour. 21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest, and teachest right, neither doest thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truely. 22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute or no? 23 But he perceiued their craftines, and sayd vnto them, Why tempt ye me? 24 Shew me a pee-nie. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and sayd, Cesar. 25 Then he sayd vnto them, Giue then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesar, and to God those which are Gods. 26 And they could not reprove his saying before the people: but they marueiled at his answere, and helde their peace. 27 Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him, 28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and hee die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother. 29 Now there were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and he dyed without children. 30 And the second tooke the wife, and he dyed childelesse. 31 Then the third tooke her: and so likewise the seuen dyed, and left no children. 32 And last of all the woman dyed also. 33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she be? for seuen had her to wife. 34 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, The children of this world marry wiues, and are married. 35 But they which shalbe counted worthy to enjoy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry wiues, neither are married. 36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection. 37 And that the dead shall rise againe, euen Moses shewed it besides the bush, when he said, The Lord is the God of Abra-ham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. 38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto him. 39 Then
certaine of the Scribes answered, and sayd, Master, thou hast well sayd. 40 And after that, durst they not aske him any thing at all. 41 Then sayd he vnto them, Howe say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? 42 And Dauid himselfe sayth in the booke of the Psalmes, The Lord sayd vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand, 43 Till I shall make thine enemies thy footestoole. 44 Seeing Dauid called him Lord, howe is he then his sonne? 45 Then in the audience of all the people he sayd vnto his discipes, 46 Beware of the Scribes, which willingly go in long robes, and loue salutations in the markets, and the highest seates in the assemblies, and the chiefe roomes at feastes: 47 Which deoure wid-owes houses, and in shewe make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

21

1 And as he behelde, he sawe the rich men, which cast their gifts into the treaurie. 2 And he sawe also a certaine poore widowe which cast in thither two mites: 3 And he sayd, Of a truth I say vnto you, that this poore widowe hath cast in more then they all. 4 For they all haue of their superfluuite cast into the offer-ings of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had. 5 Nowe as some spake of the Temple, how it was garnished with goodly stones, and with consecrate things, he sayd, 6 Are these ye things that ye looke vpon? the dayes will come wherein a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, that shall not be thrown downe. 7 Then they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe shall there be when these things shall come to passe? 8 And he sayd, Take heed, that ye be not deceiued: for many will come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neere: follow ye not them therefore. 9 And when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not afraid: for these things must first come, but the ende foloweth not by and by. 10 Then said he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, 11 And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and hunger, and pestilence, and fearefull things, and great signes shall there be from heauen. 12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, and into prisons, and bring you before Kings and rulers for my Names sake. 13 And this shall turne to you, for a testimoniall. 14 Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that ye cast not before hand, what ye shall answere. 15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisdome, where against all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake, nor resist. 16 Yea, ye shalbe betrayed also of your parents, and of your brethren, and kinsmen, and friends, and some of you shall they put to death. 17 And ye shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake. 18 Yet there shall not one heare of your heads perish. 19 By your patience pos-sesse your soules. 20 And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with souldiers, then understand that the desolation thereof is neere. 21 Then let them which are in ludea, flee to the moun-taines: and let them which are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not them that are in the coun-try, enter therein. 22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfill all things that are written. 23 But woe be to them that be with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes: for there shalbe great distresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people. 24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword, and shalbe led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shalbe troden vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be ful-filled. 25 Then there shalbe signes in the sunne, and in the moone, and in the starres, and vpon the earth.
trouble among the nations with perplexity: the sea and the waters shall roare. 26 And mens hearts shall faile them for feare, and for looking after those things which shall come on the world: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken. 27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloude, with power and great glory. 28 And when these things beginne to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads: for your redemption draweth neere. 29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold, the figge tree, and all trees, 30 When they nowe shoote foorth, ye seeing them, knowe of your owne selues, that sommer is then neere. 31 So likewise yee, when yee see these things come to passe, knowe ye that the kingdom of God is neere. 32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all these things be done: 33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away. 34 Take heede to your selues, lest at any time your hearts be oppressed with surfeting and drunkenesse, and cares of this life, and least that day come on you at vnwares. 35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. 36 Watche therefore, and pray continually, that ye may be counted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and that ye may stand before the Sonne of man. 37 Nowe in the day time hee taught in the Temple, and at night hee went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olues. 38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

1 Now the feast of vnleauened bread drewe neere, which is called the Passeouer. 2 And the hie Priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people. 3 Then entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the number of the twelue. 4 And he went his way, and communed with the hie Priests and captaines, how he might betray him to them. 5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money. 6 And he consented, and sought opportunitie to betraye him vnto them, when the people were away. 7 Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when the Passeouer must be sacrificed. 8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Go and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate it. 9 And they saide to him, Where wilt thou, that we prepare it? 10 Then he said vnto them, Beholde, when ye be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: folowe him into the house that he entreth in, 11 And say vnto the good man of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate my Passeouer with my discipes? 12 Then he shall shewe you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it ready. 13 So they went, and found as he had said vnto them, and made readie the Passeouer. 14 And when the houre was come, hee sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him. 15 Then he saide vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passeouer with you, before I suffer. 16 For I say vnto you, Hencethrough I will not eate of it any more, vntill it bee fulfilled in the kingdome of God. 17 And hee tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and said, Take this, and deuide it among you, 18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruite of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God be come. 19 And hee tooke bread, and when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you: doe this in the remembrance of me. 20 Likewise also after supper he tooke the cup, saying, This cup is that newe Testament in my blood, which is shed for you. 21 Yet beholde, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me at the table. 22 And truely the
Son of man goeth as it is appointed: but woe be to that man, by whom he is betrayed. 23 Then they began to enquire among themselves which of them it should be, that should do that. 24 And there arose also a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be ye greatest. 25 But he saide vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them, are called bountifull. 26 But yee shall not be so: but let the greatest among you be as the least: and the chiefe as he that serueth. 27 For who is greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that serueth? Is not he that sitteth at table? And I am among you as he that serueth. 28 And yee are they which haue continued with me in my tentations. 29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me, 30 That ye may eate, and drinke at my table in my kingdome, and sit on seates, and judge the twelue tribes of Israel. 31 And the Lord saide, Simon, Simon, beholde, Satan hath desired you, to winowe you as wheate. 32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. 33 And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee into prison, and to death. 34 But he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this day, before thou hast thrice denied that thou knewest me. 35 And he saide vnto them, When I sent you without bagge, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. 36 Then he said to them, But nowe he that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and hee that hath none, let him sell his coate, and buy a sworde. 37 For I say vnto you, That yet the same which is written, must be performed in me, Euen with the wicked was he nombred: for doubtlesse those things which are written of me, haue an ende. 38 And they said, Lord, beholde, here are two swordes. And he said vnto them, It is ynoough. 39 And he came out, and went (as he was wont) to the mount of Oliues: and his discipels also followed him. 40 And when hee came to the place, hee said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into tentation. 41 And he was drawn aside from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed, Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cuppe from mee: neuerthelesse, not my will, but thine be done. 43 And there appeared an Angell vnto him from heauen, comforting him. 44 But being in an agonie, hee prayed more earnestly: and his sweate was like drops of blood, trickling downe to the ground. 45 And he rose vp from prayer, and came to his discipels, and found them sleeping for heauenesse. 46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, least ye enter into tentation. 47 And while he yet spake, beholde, a companie, and he that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere Iesus to kisse him. 48 And Iesus saide vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse? 49 Now when they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall we smite with sworde? 50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and strooke off his right eare. 51 Then Iesus answered, and said, Suffer them thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him. 52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie Priests, and captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Bee ye come out as vnto a theefew with swordes and staues? 53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, yee stretched not forth the handes against mee: but this is your very houre, and the power of darkenesse. 54 Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priesteres house. And Peter followed afarre off. 55 And when they had kindled a fire in the middes of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them.
56 And a certaine mayde behelde him as hee sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him. 57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not. 58 And after a little while, another man sawe him, and saide, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not. 59 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euyn this man was with him: for he is also a Galilean. 60 And Peter saide, Man, I knowe not what thou sayest. And immediatly while hee yet spake, the cocke crewe. 61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the worde of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt deny me thrise. 62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly. 63 And the men that helde Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him. 64 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who is it that smote thee. 65 And many other thinges blasphemously spake they against him. 66 And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the hie Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councill, 67 Saying, Art thou that Christ? tell vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, ye wil not beleuee it. 68 And if also I aske you, you will not answere me, nor let me goe. 69 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God. 70 Then sayd they all, Art thou then ye Sonne of God? And he sayd to them, Ye say, that I am. 71 Then sayd they, What neede we any further witnes? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

23

1 Then the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We haue found this man perueriting the nation, and forbiding to pay tribute to Cesar, saying, That he is Christ a King. 3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And hee answered him, and sayd, Thou sayest it. 4 Then sayd Pilate to the hie Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man. 5 But they were the more fierce, saying, He moueth the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, beginning at Galile, euyn to this place. 6 Nowe when Pilate heard of Galile, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. 7 And when he knewe that he was of Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes. 8 And when Herod sawe Iesus, hee was exceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many thinges of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him. 9 Then questioned hee with him of many thinges: but he answered him nothing. 10 The hie Priests also and Scribes stood forth, and accused him vehemently. 11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and arrayed him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate. 12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemie one to another. 13 Then Pilate called together the hie Priests and the rulers, and the people, 14 And sayd vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruered the people: and beholde, I haue examinéd him before you, and haue found no fault in this man, of those thinges whereof ye accuse him: 15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and loe, nothing worthy of death is done of him. 16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose. 17 (For of necessitie hee must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast.) 18 Then all ye multitude cried at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer vnto vs Barabbas: 19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and murder, was cast in prison. 20 Then
Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose. 21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. 22 And he sayd vnto them the third time, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose. 23 But they were instant with loude voyces, and required that he might be crucified: and the voyces of them and of the hie Priests preuailed. 24 So Pilate gaue sentence, that it should be as they required. 25 And he let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murder was cast into prison, whome they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would. 26 And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the fielde, and on him they layde the crosse, to beare it after Iesus. 27 And there followed him a great multitude of people, and of women, which women bewailed and lamented him. 28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, and for your children. 29 For behold, the dayes wil come, when men shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke. 30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Couer vs. 31 For if they doe these things to a greene tree, what shalbe done to the drie? 32 And there were two others, which were euill doers, led with him to be slaine. 33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the euill doers: one at the right hand, and the other at the left. 34 Then sayd Iesus, Father, forgiue them: for they know not what they doe. And they parted his raiment, and cast lottes. 35 And the people stooode, and behelde: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He saued others: let him saue himselfe, if hee be that Christ, the Chosen of God. 36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offered him vinegar, 37 And said, If thou be the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe. 38 And a superscription was also wresten ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latin, and in Hebrewe, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES. 39 And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs. 40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? 41 We are in deede righteously here: for we receiue things worthy of that we haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse. 42 And he sayd vnto Iesus, Lord, remember me, when thou commest into thy kingdome. 43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise. 44 And it was about the sixt houre: and there was a darkenes ouer all the land, vntill the ninth houre. 45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple rent through the middes. 46 And Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and sayd, Father, into thine hands I commend my spirit. And when hee thus had sayd, hee gaue vp the ghost. 47 Nowe when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iust. 48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things, which were done, smote their brestes, and returned. 49 And all his acquaintance stood a farre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding these things. 50 And beholde, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a counseller, a good man and a iust. 51 Hee did not consent to the counsell and deede of them, which was of Ari-mathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God. 52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus, 53 And tooke it downe, and wrapped it in a linenne cloth, and laide it in a tombe hewen out of a roke, wherein was neuer man yet laide. 54 And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath.
24  
1 Nowe the first day of the weeke early in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, and certaine women with them.  
2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre, and went in, but found not the body of the Lord Iesus.  
3 And it came to passe, that as they were amased thereat, behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining vestures.  
4 And as they were afraide, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they sayd to them, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?  
5 He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile, saying, that the sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise againe.  
6 And they remembred his wordes, and returned from the sepulchre, and tolde all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the remnant.  
7 Now it was Mary Magdalene, and Ioanna, and Mary the mother of Iames, and other women with them, which tolde these things vnto the Apostles.  
8 But their wordes seemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleued they them.  
9 Then arose Peter, and ran vnto the sepulchre, and looked in, and saw the linnen clothes laide by themselves, and departed wondering in himselfe at that which was come to passe.  
10 And beholde, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus.  
11 And they talked together of all these things that were done.  
12 Then were they according to that manner spake Iesus to them.  
13 And it came to passe, as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus himselfe drewe neere, and went with them.  
14 But their eyes were holden, that they could not know him.  
15 And he sayd vnto them, What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke and are sad?  
16 And the one (named Cleopas) answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe therein in these dayes?  
17 And he said vnto them, What things? And they sayd vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mightie in deed and in word before God, and all people.  
18 And howe the heie Priests, and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.  
19 But we trusted that it had bene he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is ye third day, that they were done.  
20 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre.  
21 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which sayd, that he was alieue.  
22 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had sayd, but him they saw not.  
23 Then he sayd vnto them, O fooles and sloue of heart to beleue all that the Prophets haue spoken!  
24 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?  
25 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the Scriptures the things which were written of him.  
26 And they drew neere vnto ye towne, which they went to, but he made as though hee would haue gone further.  
27 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is towards night, and the day is farre spent. So he went in to tarie with them.  
28 And it came to passe, as hee sate at ta-
ble with them, he tooke the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaued it to them. 31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knewe him: and he was no more seene of them. 32 And they saide betweene themselves, Did not our heartes burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and when he opened to vs the Scriptures? 33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them, 34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deede, and hath appeared to Simon. 35 Then they tolde what things were done in the way, and howe he was knowne of them in breaking of bread. 36 And as they spake these things, Iesus himselfe stoode in the middes of them, and saide vp to them, Peace be to you. 37 But they were abashed and afraide, supposing that they had seene a spirit. 38 Then he saide vp to them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore doe doutes arise in your hearts? 39 Beholde mine handes and my feete: for it is I my selfe: handle me, and see: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue. 40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and feete. 41 And while they yet beleued not for ione, and wondred, he saide vp to them, Haue ye here any meate? 42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an honie combe, 43 And hee tooke it, and did eate before them. 44 And he saide vp to them, These are the wordes, which I spake vp to you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Lawe of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes. 45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, 46 And said vp to them, Thus is it written, and thus it behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day, 47 And that repentance, and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name among all nations, be-

beginning at Hierusalem. 48 Nowe ye are witnesses of these things. 49 And beholde, I doe sende the promise of my Father vpon you: but tary in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be endued with power from an hie. 50 Afterward he lead them out into Bethania, and lift vp his hands, and blessed them. 51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen. 52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ione, 53 And were continually in the Temple, prayeing, and lauding God, Amen.
THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. JOHN

1 In the beginning was that Word, and that Word was with God, and that Word was God. 2 This same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made by it, and without it was made nothing that was made. 4 In it was life, and that life was the light of men. 5 And that light shineth in the darkenss, and the darkenss comprehended it not. 6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. 7 This same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of that light, that all men through him might beleue. 8 He was not that light, but was sent to beare witnesse of that light. 9 This was that true light, which lighteth every man that commeth into the world. 10 He was in the world, and the worldle was made by him: and the worlde knewe him not. 11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not. 12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogatue to be the sonnes of God, euen to them that beleue in his Name. 13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of man, but of God. 14 And that Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we sawe the glorie thereof, as the glorie of the onely begotten Sonne of the Father) full of grace and truth. 15 Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cryed, saying, This was he of whom I said, He that commeth after me, was before me: for he was better then I. 16 And of his fulnesse haue all we receiued, and grace for grace. 17 For the Lawe was giuen by Moses, but grace, and trueth came by Iesus Christ. 18 No man hath seene God at any time: that onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him. 19 Then this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priestes and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed and denied not, and said plainly, I am not that Christ. 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he said, I am not. 22 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? What sayest thou of thy selfe? 23 He said, I am the voyce of him that cryeth in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias. 24 Nowe they which were sent, were of the Pharises. 25 And they asked him, and saide vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet? 26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whom ye knowe not. 27 He it is that commeth after me, which was before me, whose shoe latchet I am not worthie to vnloose. 28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize. 29 The next day Iohn, seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saith, Beholde that Lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world. 30 This is he of whom I saide, After me commeth a man, which was before me: for he was better then I. 31 And I knewe him not: but because he should be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water. 32 So Iohn bare recorde, saying, I behelde that Spirit come downe from heauen, like a doue, and it abode vpon him, 33 And I knewe him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, he saide vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see that Spirit come downe, and tary still on him, that is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost. 34 And I sawe, and bare record that this is that Sonne of God. 35 The next day, Iohn stode againe, and two of his disciples. 36 And he behelde Iesus walking by, and said, Beholde that Lambe of God. 37 And the two discipes heard him speake, and followed Iesus. 38 Then Iesus turned about,
and saw them follow, and saide vnto them, What seeke ye? And they saide vnto him, Rabbi (which is to say by interpretation, Master) where dwellest thou? 39 He saide vnto them, Come, and see. They came and sawe where hee dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

40 Andrew, Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which had heard it of Iohn, and that followed him. 41 The same founde his brother Simon first, and said vnto him, We haue founde that Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ. 42 And he brought him to Jesus. And Iesus behelde him, and saide, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 The day following, Iesus woulde goe into Galile, and founde Philip, and said vnto him, Followe me. 44 Nowe Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philippe founde Nathanael, and saide vnto him, Wee haue founde him of whom Moses did write in the Lawe, and the Prophetes, Iesus that sonne of Joseph, that was of Nazareth. 46 Then Nathanael sayde vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saide to him, Come, and see. 47 Iesus sawe Nathanael comming to him, and saide of him, Beholde in deede an Israelite, in whom is no guile. 48 Nathanael sayde vnto him, Whence knowest thou mee? Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the figge tree, I sawe thee. 49 Nathanael answere, and saide vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Israel. 50 Iesus answered, and sayde vnto him, Because I sayde vnto thee, I sawe thee vnder the figtree, beleuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these. 51 And he saide vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, hereafter shall yee see heauen open, and the Angels of God ascending, and descending vpon that Sonne of man.

1 And the thirde day, was there a mariage in Cana a towne of Galile, and the mother of Iesus was there. 2 And Iesus was called also, and his discipes vnto the mariage. 3 Nowe when the wine failed, the mother of Iesus saide vnto him, They haue no wine. 4 Iesus saide vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come. 5 His mother saide vnto the seruants, Whatsoever he sayeth vnto you, doe it. 6 And there were set there, sixe waterpots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins a piece. 7 And Iesus saide vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then they filled them vp to the brim.

8 Then he sayde vnto them, Draw out nowe and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So they bare it. 9 Nowe when the gouernour of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, (for he knewe not whence it was: but the seruants, which drewe the water, knewe) the gouernour of ye feast called the bridegrome, 10 And saide vnto him, All men at the beginning set fourth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept backe the good wine vntill nowe. 11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana a towne of Galile, and shewed forth his glorie: and his discipes beleued on him. 12 After that, he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his discipes: but they continued not many daies there. 13 For the Iews Passeouer was at hande. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem. 14 And he found in the Temple those that sold oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and changers of money, sitting there. 15 Then hee made a scourge of small cordes, and draue them all out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables, 16 And said vnto them that solde doues, Take these things hence: make not my fathers house, an house
of marchandise. 17 And his disciples remembred, that it was written, The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp. 18 Then answered the Iewes, and saide vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things? 19 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Destroy this Temple, and in three daies I will raise it vp againe. 20 Then said the Iewes, Fourtie and sixe yeeres was this Temple a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three daies? 21 But he spake of the temple of his bodie. 22 Assoone therefore as he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that hee thus sayde vnto them: and they beleued the Scripture, and the worde which Iesus had said. 23 Nowe when hee was at Hierusalem at the Passeouer in the feast, many beleued in his Name, when they sawe his miracles which he did. 24 But Iesus did not commit him selfe vnto them, because he knewe them all, 25 And had no neede that any should testifie of man: for he knewe what was in man.

3

1 There was nowe a man of the Pharises, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes. 2 This man came to Iesus by night, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, we knowe ye thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could do these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him. 3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, he can not see the kingdome of God. 4 Nicodemus sayde vnto him, Howe can a man be born which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne? 5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirtie, hee can not enter into the kingdome of God. 6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit. 7 Marueile not that I said to thee, Yee must be borne againe. 8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: so is euery man that is borne of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, Howe can these things be? 10 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, Art thou a teacher of Israel, and knowest not these things? 11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, wee speake that we know, and testifie that we haue seene: but yee receiue not our witnesse. 12 If when I tel you earthly things, ye beleue not, howe should yee beleue, if I shall tel you of heavenly things? 13 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen, but he that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen. 14 And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wildernesse, so must that Sonne of man be lift vp. 15 That whosoeuer beleueth beleueth in him, shoulde not perish, but haue eternall life. 16 For God so loued the worlde, that hee hath giuen his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleueth in him, should not perish, but haue everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Sonne into the world, that he should condemne the world, but that the world through him might be saued. 18 Hee that beleueth in him, is not condemned: but hee that beleueth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God. 19 And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the worlde, and men loued darknesse rather then that light, because their deedes were euill. 20 For euery man that euill doeth, hateth the light, neither commeth to light, least his deedes should be reprooued. 21 But he that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might bee made manifest, that they are wrought according to God. 22 After these things, came Iesus and his discipiles into the lande of Iudea, and there taried with them, and baptized. 23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon besides Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were
baptized. 24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison. 25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying. 26 And they came vnto Iohn, and saide vnto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Iorden, to whom thou barest witnesse, behold, he baptizeth, and all men come to him. 27 Iohn answered, and saide, A man can receiueth nothing, except it be giuen him from heauen. 28 Yee your selues are my witnesses, that I sayde, I am not that Christ, but that I am sent before him. 29 He that hath the bride, is the bride-grome: but the friend of the bride-grome which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegomes Joyce. This my joy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He must increase, but I must decrease. 31 Hee that is come from an hie, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: hee that is come from heauen, is aboue all. 32 And what hee hath seene and heard, that he testifieth: but no man receiueth his testimonie. 33 He that hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that God is true. 34 For hee whome God hath sent, speaketh the woordes of God: for God giueth him not the Spirit by measure. 35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath giuen all things into his hande. 36 Hee that beleeueth in the Sonne, hath euerylasting life, and hee that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

4

1 Nowe when the Lord knew, how the Pharises had heard, that Iesus made and baptized moe disciples then Iohn, 2 (Though Iesus himselfe baptized not: but his disciples) 3 Hee left Iudea, and departed againe into Galilie. 4 And he must needes goe through Samaria. 5 Then came hee to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the possession that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph. 6 And there was Iacobes well. Iesus then wearied in the iourney, sate thus on the well: it was about the sixt houre. 7 There came a woman of Samaria to drawe water. Iesu sayd vnto her, Giue me drinke. 8 For his disciples were gone away into the citie, to buy meate. 9 Then sayde the woman of Samaria vnto him, Howe is it, that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritans. 10 Iesus answered and saide vnto her, If thou knewest that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue mee drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and hee woulde haue giuen thee, water of life. 11 The woman saieth vnto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that water of life? 12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and hee himselfe dranke thereof, and his sonnes, and his cattell? 13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe: 14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shall never be more a thirst: but the water that I shall giue him, shalbe in him a well of water, springing vp into euerylasting life. 15 The woman said vnto him, Syr, giue me of that water, that I may not thirst, neither come hither to drawe. 16 Iesus said vnto her, Go, call thine husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered, and saieth, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband. 18 For thou hast had fiue husbands, and he whom thou nowe hast, is not thine husband: that saidest thou truely. 19 The woman saieth vnto him, Sir, I see that thou art a Prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. 21 Iesus saieth vnto her, Woman, beleue me, the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hierusalem worship ye Father. 22 Ye worship that which ye knowe not: we worship that
which we knowe: for salutation is of the Iewes.  
23 But the houre commeth, and nowe is, when the true worship-
pers shall worship the Father in spirit, and trueth: for the Father requireth
euen such to worship him.  
24 God is a Spirite, and they that worship
him, must worship him in spirit and
trueth.  
25 The woman said vnto him, I
knowe well that Messias shall come
which is called Christ: when he is
come, he will tell vs all things.  
26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake
vnto thee.  
27 And vpon that, came
his disciples, and marueiled that he
talked with a woman: yet no man
said vnto him, What askest thou? or
why talkest thou with her?  
28 The
woman then left her waterpot, and
went her way intO the citie, and said
to the men,  
29 Come, see a man which
hath tolde me all things that euer I
did: is not he that Christ?  
30 Then
they went out of the citie, and came
vnto him.  
31 In the meane while, the
disciples prayed him, saying, Mas-
ter, eate.  
32 But he said vnto them,
I haue meate to eate that ye know
not of.  
33 Then said ye disciples be-
tweene themselves, Hath any man
brought him meate?  
34 Iesus saide
vnto them, My meate is that I may
doe the will of him that sent me,
and finish his worke.  
35 Say not ye,
There are yet four moneths, and
then commeth harvest? Beholde, I
say vnto you, LIFT vp your eyes, and
looke on the regions: for they are
white alredie vnto harvest.  
36 And
he that reapeth, receiueth rewarde,
and gathereth fruite vnto life etern-
all, that both he that soweth, and he
that reapeth, might reioyce together.
37 For herein is the saying true, that
one soweth, and an other reapeth.  
38 I sent you to reap that, whereon
ye bestowed no labour: other men
laboured, and ye are entred into their
labours.  
39 Nowe many of the Samari-
tans of that citie beleuued in him, for
the saying of the woman which testi-
fied, He hath tolde me all things that
euer I did.  
40 Then when the Samar-
itans were come vnto him, they be-
sought him, that he woulde tarie with
them: and he abode there two dayes.
41 And many moe beleuued because of
his owne word.  
42 And they said vnto
the woman, Nowe we beleuue, not
because of thy saying: for we haue
heard him our selues, and knowe that
this is in deede that Christ the Saviour
of the world.  
43 So two dayes after
he departed thence, and went into
Galile.  
44 For Iesus himselfe had testi-
fied, that a Prophet hath none honour
in his owne countrey.  
45 Then when
he was come into Galile, the Galileans
receiued him, which had seene all the
things that he did at Hierusalem at
the feast: for they went also vnto the
feast.  
46 And Iesus came againe into
Cana a towne of Galile, where he had
made of water, wine. And there was a
certaine ruler, whose sonne was sicke
at Capernaum.  
47 When he heard
that Iesus was come out of Iudea into
Galile, he went vnto him, and be-
sought him that he would goe downe,
and heale his sonne: for he was euen
ready to die.  
48 Then saieth Iesus vnto
him, Except ye see signes and won-
ders, ye will not beleue.  
49 The ruler
said vnto him, Syr, goe downe before
my sonne dye.  
50 Iesus said vnto him,
Go thy way, thy sonne liueth: and the
man beleuued the worde that Iesus
had spoken vnto him, and went his
way.  
51 And as he was nowe going
downe, his seruants met him, saying,
Thy sonne liueth.  
52 Then enquired
he of them the houre when he be-
gan to amend. And they said vnto
him, Yesterday the seuenthe houre the
feuer left him.  
53 Then the father
knew, that it was the same houre in
the which Iesus had said vnto him,
Thy sonne liueth. And he beleuued,
and all his houshould.  
54 This second
miracle did Iesus againe, after he was
come out of Iudea into Galile.

1 After that, there was a feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp
to Hierusalem.  
2 And there is at
Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe, a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda, havinge fiue porches: 3 In the which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, wafting for the mowing of the water. 4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first, after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. 5 And a certaine man was there, which had bene diseased eight and thirtie yeeres. 6 When Iesus sawe him lie, and knew that he nowe long time had bene diseased, he saide vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole? 7 The sicke man answered him, Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me. 8 Iesus said vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed, and walke. 9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked; and the same day was the Sabbath. 10 The Iewes therefore said to him that was made whole, It is the Sabbath day: it is not lawfull for thee to cary thy bed. 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke. 12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed and walke? 13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Iesus had conuieied himselfe away from the multitude that was in that place. 14 And after that, Iesus founde him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Beholde, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee. 15 The man departed, and tolde the Iewes that it was Iesus, which had made him whole. 16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day. 17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke. 18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but said also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God. 19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue that he seeth the Father doe: for whosoeuer things he doth, the same things doeth the Sonne in like maner. 20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things, whosoeuer he himselfe doeth, and he will shewe him greater workes then these, that ye should marueile. 21 For likewise as the Father rayseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will. 22 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement vnto the Sonne, 23 Because that all men shoude honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth not the Father, which hath sent him. 24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my worde, and beleueth him that sent me, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but hath passed from death vnto life. 25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre shall come, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare it, shall liue. 26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe, so likewise hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe, 27 And hath giuen him power also to execute judgement, in that he is the Sonne of man. 28 Marueile not at this: for the houre shall come, in the which all that are in the graues, shall heare his voyce. 29 And they shall come forth, that haue done good, vnto ye resurrection of life: but they that haue done euil, vnto the resurrection of condemnation. 30 I can doe nothing of mine owne selfe: as I heare, I judge: and my judgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me. 31 If I should beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse were not true. 32 There
is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witnesse, which he beareth of me, is true. 33 Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth. 34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuerthelesse these things I say, that ye might be saued. 35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and ye would for a season haue reioyced in his light. 36 But I haue greater witnesse then the witnesse of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I doe, beare witnesse of me, that the Father sent me. 37 And the Father himselfe, which hath sent me, beareth witnesse of me. Ye haue not heard his voyce at any time, neither haue ye seene his shape. 38 And his worde haue you not abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleueu not. 39 Searche the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me. 40 But ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life. 41 I receiue not the prayse of men. 42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you. 43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue. 44 How can ye beleuee, which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God alone? 45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to my Father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses, in whom ye trust. 46 For had ye beleueed Moses, ye would haue beleueed me: for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye beleueu not his wrtings, how shall ye beleuee my wordees?

6

1 After these things, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias. 2 And a great multitude followed him, because they sawe his miracles, which hee did on them that were diseased. 3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples. 4 Now the Passeouer, a feast of the Iewes, was neere. 5 Then Iesus lift vp his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, hee sayde vnto Philippe, Whence shall we breade, that these might eate? 6 (And this he sayde to proue him: for hee himselfe knewe what he would doe.) 7 Philippe answered him, Two hundreth penie worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a litle. 8 Then saide vnto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, 9 There is a little boy heere, which hath fiue barlie loaues, and two fishes: what are they among so many? 10 And Iesus saide, Make ye people sit downe. (Nowe there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe in nomber, about fiue thousande. 11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gaue thanks, and gaue to the disciples, and the disciplises, to them that were set downe: and likewise of the fishes as much as they would. 12 And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his disciplises, Gather vp the broken meat which remaineth, that nothing be lost. 13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baskets with the broken meat of the fiue barly loaues, which remained vnto them that had eaten. 14 Then the men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, saide, This is of a trueth that Prophet that should come into the world. 15 When Iesus therfore perceiued that they would come, and take him to make him a King, hee departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone. 16 When euen was nowe come, his disciplises went downe vnto the sea, 17 And entred into a shipphe, and went ouer the sea, towards Capernaun: and nowe it was darke, and Iesus was not come to them. 18 And the Sea arose with a great winde that blew. 19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they sawe Iesus walking on the sea, and drawing
neere vnto the ship: so they were afraide. 20 But he said vnto them, It is I: be not afraid. 21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ship, and the ship was by and by at the lande, whither they went. 22 The day following, the people which stooed on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other ship there, saue that one, whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples in the ship, but that his disciples were gone alone,23 And that there came other ships from Tiberias neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lord had giuen thankes. 24 Nowe when the people saue that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus. 25 And when they had founde him on the other side of the sea, they sayde vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? 26 Iesus answered them; and sayde, Verely, verely I say vnto you, ye seeke me not because ye sawe the miracles, but because yee ate of ye loaues, and were filled. 27 Labour not for ye meate which perisheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto euerverlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. 28 Then sayde they vnto him, What shall we doe, that we might worke the workes of God? 29 Iesus answered, and sayde vnto them, This is the worke of God, that yee beleue in him, whome he hath sent. 30 They sayde therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see it, and beleue thee? what doest thou worke? 31 Our fathers did eate Manna in the desart, as it is written, Hee gaue them bread from heauen to eate. 32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen. 33 For the brede of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world. 34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread. 35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am that bread of life: he that commeth to me, shall not hunger, and he that beleueth in me, shall neuer thirst. 36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleue not. 37 All that the Father giueth me, shall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I cast not away. 38 For I came downe from heauen, not to do mine owne wil, but his wil which hath sent me. 39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent mee, that of all which hee hath giuen mee, I should lose noth-ing, but shoulde raise it vp againe at the last day. 40 And this is the will of him that sent mee, that euery man which seeth the Sonne, and beleueth in him, should haue euerverlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day. 41 The Iewes then murmured at him because hee sayde, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen. 42 And they said, Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother wee knowe? howe then sayth he, I came downe from heauen? 43 Iesus then answered, and saide vnto them, Murmure not among your selues. 44 No man can come to mee, except the Father, which hath sent mee, drawe him: and I will raise him vp at the last day. 45 It is written in the Prophetes, And they shalbe al taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me: 46 Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue hee which is of God, hee hath seene the Father. 47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, hee that beleueth in me, hath euerverlasting life. 48 I am that bread of life. 49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead. 50 This is that bread, which commeth downe from heauen, that hee which eateth of it, shoule not die. 51 I am that liuing brede, which came downe from heauen: if any man eate of this brede, hee shall liue for euuer: and the brede that I will giue, is
my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. 52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselues, saying, Howe can this man giue vs his flesh to eate? 53 Then Iesus saide vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except yee eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you. 54 Whosoeuer eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day. 55 For my flesh is meat in deede, and my blood is drinke in deede. 56 Hee that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. 57 As that liuing Father hath sent me, so liue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me. 58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, and are deade. Hee that eateth of this bread, shall liue for euer. 59 These things spake he in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum. 60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) sayde, This is an hard saying: who can heare it? 61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at this, saide vnto them, Doeth this offend you? 62 What then if yee should see that Sonne of man ascend vp where he was before? 63 It is the spirite that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the woordes that I speake vnto you, are spirite and life. 64 But there are some of you that beleue not: for Iesus knewe from the begining, which they were that beleueed not, and who shoulde betray him. 65 And hee said, Therefore saide I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father. 66 From that time, many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him. 67 Then sayde Iesus to the twelue, Will yee also goe away? 68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whome shall we goe? thou hast the wordes of eternall life: 69 And we beleue and knowe that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God. 70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill? 71 Now he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for hee it was that shoulde betraye him, though he was one of the twelue.

7

1 After these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and woulde not walke in Iuda: for the Iewes sought to kill him. 2 Nowe the Iewes feast of the Tabernacles was at hande. 3 His brethren therefore sayde vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iuda, that thy discipless may see thy workes that thou doest. 4 For there is no man that doeth any thing secretly, and hee himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shewe thy selfe to the worlde. 5 For as yet his brethren beleued not in him. 6 Then Iesus saide vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie. 7 The world can not hate you: but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill. 8 Go ye vp vnto this feast: I wil not go vp yet vnto this feast: for my time is not yet fulfilled. 9 These things he sayde vnto them, and abode still in Galile. 10 But assoone as his brethren were gone vp, then went hee also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were priuilie. 11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and saide, Where is hee? 12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some said, He is a good man: other sayd, Nay: but he deceueth the people. 13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for feare of the Iewes. 14 Nowe when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the Temple and taught. 15 And the Iewes marueiled, saving, Howe knoweth this man the Scriptures, seeing that hee neuer learned! 16 Iesus answered them, and saide, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any man will doe his will, he
shall knowe of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe. 18 Hee that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glorie: but hee that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnes is in him. 19 Did not Moses giue you a Law, and yet none of you keepest the lawe? Why goe ye about to kill me? 20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a deuil: who goeth about to kill thee? 21 Iesus answered, and saide to them, I haue done one worke, and ye all maruaile. 22 Moses therefore gaue vnto you circumsicion, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers) and ye on the Sabbath day circumsice a man. 23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that the Lawe of Moses should not be broken, be ye angrie with me, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath day? 24 Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous judgement. 25 Then saide some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he, whom they goe about to kill? 26 And beholde, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him: doe the rulers know in deede that this is in deede that Christ? 27 Howbeit we know this man whene he is: but when that Christ commeth, no man shall knowe whence he is. 28 Then cried Iesus in the Temple as hee taught, saying, Ye both knowe mee, and knowe whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whom ye knowe not. 29 But I knowe him: for I am of him, and he hath sent me. 30 Then they sought to take him, but no man layde handes on him, because his houre was not yet come. 31 Now many of the people beleueed in him, and said, When that Christ commeth, will he doe mee miracles then this man hath done? 32 The Pharises heard that the people murmured these thinges of him, and the Pharises, and high Priestes sent officers to take him. 33 Then saide Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a little while with you, and then goe I vnto him that sent mee. 34 Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me, and where I am, can ye not come. 35 Then saide the Iewes amongs themselues, Whither will he goe, that we shall not finde him? Will he goe vnto them that are dispersed among the Grecians, and teache the Grecians? 36 What saying is this that hee saide, Ye shall seeke mee, and shall not finde mee? and where I am, cannot ye come? 37 Nowe in the last and great day of the feast, Iesus stoode and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke. 38 Hee that beleueth in mee, as saith the Scripture, out of his bellie shall flowe riuers of water of life. 39 (This spake hee of the Spirite which they that beleueed in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet giuen, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.) 40 So many of the people, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is that Prophet. 41 Other saide, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall that Christ come out of Galile? 42 Saith not the Scripture that that Christ shall come of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Beth-leeem, where Dauid was? 43 So was there dissension among the people for him. 44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man layde handes on him. 45 Then came the officers to the hie Priestes and Pharises, and they said vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him? 46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man. 47 Then answered them the Pharises, Are yee also deceived? 48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleue in him? 49 But this people, which know not the Law, are cursed. 50 Nicodemus said vnto them, (he that came to Iesus by night, and was one of them.) 51 Doth our Law iudge a man before it heare him, and knowe what he hath done? 52 They answered, and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galile? Searche and looke: for out of Galile ariseth no Prophet. 53 And euerie man wet vnto his owne house.
8

1 And Jesus went nto the mount of Olives, 2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came nto him, and he sate downe, and taught them. 3 Then the Scribes, and the Pharises brought nto him a woman, taken in adulterie, and set her in the mides, 4 And said nto him, Master, we foud this woman committing adulterie, even in the very acte. 5 Now Moses in our Law commanded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore? 6 And this they saide to tempt him, that they might haue, whereof to accuse him. But Jesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the groud. 7 And while they continued asking him, hee lift himself vp, and sayde nto them, Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her. 8 And againe hee stouped downe, and wrote on the ground. 9 And when they heard it, being accused by their owne conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at ye eldest euen to the last: so Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the mides. 10 When Jesus had lift vp himselfe againe, and sawe no man, but the woman, hee saide nto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemne thee: goe and sinne no more. 12 Then spake Jesus againe nto them, saying, I am that light of the worlde: hee that followeth mee, shall not walke in darkenes, but shall haue that light of life. 13 The Pharises therefore said nto him, Thou bearest recorde of thy selfe: thy recorde is not true. 14 Jesus answered, and sayde nto them, Though I beare recorde of my selfe, yet my recorde is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I goe. 15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man. 16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father, that sent mee. 17 And it is also written in your Lawe, that the testimonie of two men is true. 18 I am one that beare witnes of my selfe, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnes of me. 19 Then saide they nto him, Where is that Father of thine? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had known me, ye should haue known that Father of mine also. 20 These wordes spake Jesus in the treasury, as hee taught in the Temple, and no man layde handes on him: for his houre was not yet come. 21 Then saide Jesus againe nto them, I goe my way, and ye shall seeke me, and shall die in your sinnes, Whither I goe, can ye not come. 22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himselfe, because he saith, Whither I goe, can ye not come? 23 And hee saide nto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from aboue: ye are of this world, I am not of this worlde. 24 I said therefore nto you, That ye shall die in your sinnes: for except ye believe, that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes. 25 Then saide they nto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saide nto them, Euen the same thing that I said nto you from the beginning. 26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: but he that sent me, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, those speake I to the world. 27 They vnderstoode not that hee spake to them of the Father. 28 Then said Jesus nto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught me, so I speake these things. 29 For he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone, because I do alwayes those things that please him. 30 As hee spake these things, many beleueed in him. 31 Then said Jesus to the Iewes which beleueed in him, If ye continue in my worde, ye are verely my disciples, 32 And shall know
John 8:33 108 John 9:6

the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33 They answered him, Wee be Abrahams seede, and were never bonde to any man: why sayest thou then, Ye shalbe made free? 34 Jesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer commiteth sinne, is the servant of sinne. 35 And the servant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer. 36 If that Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shalbe free in deede. 37 I know that ye are Abra-
hames seede, but yee seeke to kill mee, because my worde hath no place in you. 38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye doe that which ye haue seene with your father. 39 They answered, and saide vnto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye woulde doe the workes of Abra-
ham. 40 But nowe ye goe about to kill mee, a man that haue told you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye do the 
workes of your father. Then said they to him, We are not borne of fornica-
tion: we haue one Father, which is God. 42 Therefore Jesus sayde vnto them, If God were your father, then woulde ye loue mee: for I proceeded 
forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me. 43 Why doe ye not vnderstande my talke? because ye cannot heare my worde. 44 Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lustes of your father ye will doe: hee hath bene a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When hee speaketh a lie, then speaketh hee of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 45 And because I tell you the trueth, yee beleue me not. 46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth, why do ye not beleue me? 47 He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: yee therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. 48 Then answered the Iewes, and said

vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill? 49 Jesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, and ye haue dishonoured me. 50 And I seeke not mine owne praise: but there is one that seeketh it, and judgeth. 51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer see death. 52 Then said the Iewes to him, Now know we that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets: and thou sayest, If a man keepe my worde, he shall neuer taste of death. 53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whome makest thou thy selfe? 54 Jesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it is my Father that honoureth me, whome ye saye, that hee is your God. 55 Yet ye haue not knownen him: but I knowe him, and if I should say I know him not, I should be a liar like vnto you: but I knowe him, and keepe his worde. 56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day, and he sawe it, and was glad. 57 Then sayd ye Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeere olde, and hast thou seene Abraham? 58 Jesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am. 59 Then tooke they vp stones, to cast at him, but Jesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple: And hee passed through the middes of them, and so went his 
way.

9

1 And as Jesus passed by, he sawe a man which was blinde from his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blinde? 3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents, but that the workes of God should be shewed on him. 4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke. 5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. 6 Assoone
as he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the eyes of the blinde with the clay, 7 And sayd vnto him, Go wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came againe seeing. 8 Nowe the neighbours and they that had seene him before, when he was blinde, sayd, Is not this he that sate and begged? 9 Some said, This is he: and other sayd, He is like him: but he himselfe sayd, I am he. 10 Therefore they sayd vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, and sayd, The man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and sayde vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam and wash. So I went and washed, and receiued sight. 12 Then they sayd vnto him, Where is he? He sayd, I can not tell. 13 They brought to the Pharises him that was once blinde. 14 And it was the Sabbath day, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Then againe the Pharises also asked him, how he had receiued sight. And hee sayd vnto them, He layd clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see. 16 Then said some of the Pharises, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath day. Others sayd, Howe can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a dissension among them. 17 Then spake they vnto the blinde againe, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he sayd, He is a Prophet. 18 Then the Iewes did not beleue him (that he had bene blinde, and receiued his sight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight. 19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whom ye say was borne blinde? How doeth he nowe see then? 20 His parents answered them, and sayd, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blinde: 21 But by what meanes hee nowe seeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is olde ynough: ask he: hee shall answere for himselfe. 22 These wordes spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordened already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be excommunicate out of the Synagogue. 23 Therefore sayde his parents, Hee is olde ynough: aske him. 24 Then againe called they the man that had bene blinde, and sayd vnto him, Gius glory vnto God: we know that this man is a sinner. 25 Then he answered, and sayd, Whether hee be a sinner or no, I can not tell: one thing I know, that I was blinde, and nowe I see. 26 Then sayd they to him againe, What did he to thee? howe opened he thine eyes? 27 Hee answered them, I haue tolde you already, and yee haue not heard it: wherefore would yee heare it againe? will yee also be his disciples? 28 Then reuiled they him, and sayd, Be thou his disciple: we be Moses disciples. 29 We know that God spake with Moses: but this man we know not from whence he is. 30 The man answered, and sayde vnto them, Doutlesse, this is a maruellous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. 31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him heareth he. 32 Since the world began, was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde. 33 If this man were not of God, hee could haue done nothing. 34 They answered, and sayd vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? so they cast him out. 35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he sayd vnto him, Doest thou beleue in the Sonne of God? 36 He answered, and sayd, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleue in him? 37 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that talketh with thee. 38 Then he sayd, Lord, I
belieue, and worshipped him. 39 And Iesus sayd, I am come vnto judgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: and that they which see, might be made blinde. 40 And some of the Pharisses which were with him, heard these things, and sayd vnto him, Are we blinde also? 41 Iesus sayd vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye should not haue sinne: but nowe ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

10

1 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that entreteth not in by the doore into the sheepefolde, but climeth vp another way, he is a theefe and a robber. 2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheepe. 3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out. 4 And when hee hath sent forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voyce. 5 And they will not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they know not the voyce of strangers. 6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they understode not what things they were which he spake vnto them. 7 Then sayd Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am that doore of the sheepe. 8 All, that euer came before me, are theeues and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them. 9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saued, and shall go in, and go out, and finde pasture. 10 The theefe commeth not, but for to steale, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in abundance. 11 I am that good shepheard: that good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe. 12 But an hireling, and hee which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the wolfe comming, and hee leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattreth the sheepe. 13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe. 14 I am that good shepheard, and knowe mine, and am known of mine. 15 As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for my sheepe. 16 Other sheepe I haue also, which are not of this folde: them also must I bring, and they shall heare my voyce: and there shalbe one sheepefolde, and one shepheard. 17 Therefore doeth my Father loue me, because I lay downe my life, that I might take it againe. 18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and haue power to take it againe: this commandement haue I receiued of my Father. 19 Then there was a dissension againe among the Iewes for these sayings, 20 And many of them sayd, He hath a deuill, and is mad: why heare ye him? 21 Other sayd, These are not the wordes of him that hath a deuill: can the deuill open the eyes of the blinde? 22 And it was at Hierusalem the feast of the Dedication, and it was winter. 23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, in Salomons porche. 24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and sayd vnto him, Howe long doest thou make vs dout? If thou be that Christ, tell vs plainly. 25 Iesus answered them, I tolde you, and ye belieue not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnes of me. 26 But ye belieue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I sayd vnto you. 27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I knowe them, and they follow me, 28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any pluckle them out of mine hand. 29 My Father which gaue them me, is greater then all, and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand. 30 I and my Father are one. 31 Then ye Iewes againe tooke vp stones, to stone him. 32 Iesus answered them, Many good
workes haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of these workes doe ye stone me? 33 The lewes answered him, saying, For the good worke we stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God. 34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Lawe, I sayd, Ye are gods? 35 If hee called them gods, vnto whome the worde of God was giuen, and the Scripture cannot be broken, 36 Say ye of him, whome the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the worlde, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God? 37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleuee me not. 38 But if I doe, then though ye beleuee not mee, yet beleuee the workes, that ye may knowe and beleuee, that the Father is in me, and I in him. 39 Againe they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their handes, 40 And went againe beyonde Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, and there abode. 41 And many resorted vnto him, and saide, Iohn did no miracle: but all thignes that Iohn spake of this man, were true. 42 And many beleueed in him there.

11

1 And a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Marie, and her sister Martha. 2 (And it was that Mary which anointed the Lord with oynment, and wiped his feete with her heare, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.) 3 Therefore his sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, beholde, he whome thou louest, is sicke. 4 When Iesus heard it, he saide, This sickenes is not vnto death, but for the glorie of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby. 5 Nowe Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode hee two dayes still in the same place where he was. 7 Then after that, said he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe. 8 The disciples saide vnto him, Master, the lewes lately sought to stone thee, and doest thou goe thither againe? 9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, hee stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walke in the night, hee stumbleth, because there is no light in him. 11 These things spake he, and after, he said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleeppeth: but I goe to wake him vp. 12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he shalbe safe. 13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall sleepe. 14 Then saide Iesus vnto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may beleuee: but let vs goe vnto him. 16 Then saide Thomas (which is called Didymus) vnto his felowe disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him. 17 Then came Iesus, and found that he had lien in the graue foure dayes alreadie. 18 (Nowe Bethania was neere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs off.) 19 And many of ye lewes were come to Martha and Marie to comfort them for their brother. 20 Then Martha, when shee heard that Iesus was comming, went to meete him: but Mary sate still in the house. 21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my brother had not bene dead. 22 But now I know also, that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God will giue it thee. 23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe. 24 Martha said vnto him, I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day. 25 Iesus saide vnto her, I am the resurrection and the life: he that belieueth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he liue. 26 And whosoeuer lioveth, and belieueth in me, shall never die: Beleeuest thou this? 27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I belieuee that thou art that Christ that Sonne of God, which should come into the world. 28 And when she had
so saide, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee. 29 And when she heard it, shee arose quickly, and came vnto him. 30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him. 31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they sawe Marie, that she rose vp hastily, and went out, folowed her, saying, She goeth vpnto the graue, to weeppe there. 32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and sawe him, she fell downe at his feete, saying vpnto him, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead. 33 When Iesus therefore sawe her wepee, and the Iewes also wepee which came with her, hee groned in the spirit, and was troubled in himselfe. 34 And saide, Where haue ye layde him? They said vpnto him, Lord, come and see. 35 And Iesus wept. 36 Then saide the Iewes, Beholde, how he loued him. 37 And some of them saide, Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made also, that this man should not haue died? 38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was a caue, and a stone was layde vpon it. 39 Iesus saide, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh alreadie: for he hath bene dead foure dayes. 40 Iesus saide vnto her, Saide I not vnto thee, that if thou diddest beleue, thou shouldest see the glorie of God? 41 Then they toooke away the stone from the place where the dead was layde. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and saide, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me. 42 I knowe that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleue, that thou hast sent me. 43 As hee had spoken these things, hee cried with a loude voyce, Lazarus, come forthe. 44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hande and foote with bandes, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vpnto them, Loose him, and let him goe. 45 Then many of the Iewes, which came to Mary, and had seene the things, which Iesus did, beleueed in him. 46 But some of them went their way to the Pharises, and told them what things Iesus had done. 47 Then gathered the hie Priestes, and the Pharises a counsell, and said, What shall we doe? For this man doeth many miracles. 48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleue in him, and the Romanes will come and take away both our place, and the nation. 49 Then one of them named Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yere, said vpnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all, 50 Nor yet doe you consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 51 This spake hee not of himselfe: but being hie Priest that same yere, he prophesied that Iesus should die for that nation: 52 And not for that nation onely, but that he shoulde gather together in one the children of God, which were scattered. 53 Then from that day foorth they consulted together, to put him to death. 54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vpnto a countrey neere to the wildernes, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his discipules. 55 And the Iewes Passeouer was at hande, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer, to purifie themselues. 56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselves, as they stode in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he cometh not to the feast? 57 Now both the high Priestes and the Pharises had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.
Lazarus was, who died, whom he had raised from the dead. 2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him. 3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenarde very costly, and anointed Jesus feete, and wiped his feete with her heare, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment. 4 Then said one of his disciples, euen Judas Iscariot Simons sonne, which should betray him: 5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundreth pence, and giuen to the poore? 6 Nowe he said this, not that he cared for the poore, but because hee was a theefe, and had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. 7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it. 8 For the poore always yee haue with you, but me ye shall not haue always. 9 Then much people of the Iewes knewe that hee was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whome he had raiyed from the dead. 10 The hie Priestes therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also, 11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, and beleued in Jesus. 12 On the morowe a great multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus should come to Hierusalem, 13 Took branches of palme trees, and went forth to meete him, and cried, Hosanna, Blessed is the King of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord. 14 And Jesus found a yong ass, and sate thereon, as it is written, 15 Feare not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King commeth sitting on an asses colte. 16 But his disciples understooode not these things at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembred they, that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him. 17 The people therefore that was with him, bare witnesse that hee called Lazarus out of the graue, and raised him from the dead. 18 Therefore mette him the people also, because they heard that he had done this miracle. 19 And the Pharises said among themselues, Perceiue ye howe ye preuaile nothing? Beholde, the worlde goeth after him. 20 Nowe there were certaine Greekes among them that came vp to worship at the feast. 21 And they came to Phillippe, which was of Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, saying, Syr, we would see that Jesus. 22 Phillippe came and tolde Andrew: and againe Andrew and Phillippe tolde Iesus. 23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man must bee glorified. 24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wheate corne fall into the grounde and die, it bideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruite. 25 He that loueth his life, shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall. 26 If any man serue me, let him follow me: for where I am, there shall also my seruant be: and if any man serue me, him will my Father honour. 27 Now is my soule troubled: and what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre. 28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it againe. 29 Then saide the people that stode by, and heard, that it was a thunder: other said, An Angel spake to him. 30 Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not because of me, but for your sakes. 31 Now is the judgement of this world: nowe shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will drawe all men vnto me. 33 Nowe this sayd he, signifying what death he should die. 34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of the Law, that that Christ bideth for euer: and howe sayest thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man? 35 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Yet a litle while is the
light with you: walke while ye haue that light, lest the darkenes come vpon you: for hee that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid himselfe from them. 37 And though he had done so many miracles before them, yet beleeued they not on him, 38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophete might be fulfilled, that he sayd, Lord, who beleeued our report? and to whome is the arme of the Lord reueiled? 39 Therefore could they not beleeue, because that Esaias saith againe, 40 He hath blinded their eyes, and hardnes their heart, that they shoulde not see with their eyes, nor vnderstand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heale them. 41 These things sayd Esaias when he sawe his glory, and spake of him. 42 Neuertheles, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleeued in him: but because of the Pharises they did not confess him, least they should be cast out of the Synagogue. 43 For they loued the praye of men, more then the praye of God. 44 And Iesus cryed, and sayd, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me. 45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever beleeueth in me, should not abide in darkenes. 47 And if any man heare my wordes, and beleeue not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to saue the world. 48 He that refuseth me, and receiueth not my wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: the worde that I haue spoken, it shall iudge him in the last day. 49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father which sent me, hee gave me a commandement what I should say, and what I should speake. 50 And I knowe that his commandement is life euerlasting: the thinges therefore that I speake, I speake them so as the Father sayde vnto me.

13

1 Nowe before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knewe that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the end he loued them. 2 And when supper was done (and that the deuill had now put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne, to betray him) 3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come forth from God, and went to God, 4 He riseth from supper, and layeth aside his vpper garments, and tooke a towel, and girded himselfe. 5 After that, hee powdered water into a basen, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell, wherewith he was girded. 6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who sayd to him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete? 7 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not nowe: but thou shalt knowe it hereafter. 8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me. 9 Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also the hands and the head. 10 Iesus sayd to him, He that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feete, but is cleane euery whit: and ye are cleane, but not all. 11 For hee knewe who should betray him: therefore sayd he, Ye are not all cleane. 12 So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he sayd vnto them, Knowe ye what I haue done to you? 13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for so am I. 14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, ye also ought to wash one an others feete. 15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should doe, eu'en as I haue done to you. 16 Verely,
verely I say unto you, The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then he that sent him. 17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye, if ye doe them. 18 I speake not of you all: I know whom I haue chosen: but it is that the Scripture might be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me. 19 From henceforth tell I you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleuee that I am he. 20 Verely, verely I say unto you, If I send any, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and hee that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. 21 When Iesus had sayd these things, he was troubled in the Spirit, and testified, and said, Verely, verely I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake. 23 Nowe there was one of his disciples, which leaned on Iesus bosome, whom Iesus loued. 24 To him beckened therefore Simon Peter, that he should aske who it was of whom he spake. 25 He then, as he leaned on Iesus breast, saide vnto him, Lord, who is it? 26 Iesus answered, He it is, to whome I shall giue a soppe, when I haue dipt it: and hee wet a soppe, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne. 27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him. Then sayd Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly. 28 But none of them that were at table, knew, for what cause he spake it vnto him. 29 For some of them thought because Iudas had the bag, that Iesus had sayd vnto him, Buy those things that we haue neede of against ye feast: or that he should giue some thing to the poore. 30 Assoone then as he had receiuied the soppe, he went immediately out, and it was night. 31 When hee was gone out, Iesus sayd, Nowe is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. 32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him. 33 Litle children, yet a litle while am I with you: ye shall seeke me, but as I sayde vnto the Iewes, Whither I goe, can ye not come: also to you say I nowe, 34 A newe com- mandement giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another: as I haue loued you, that ye also loue one another. 35 By this shall all men knowe that ye are my disciples, if ye haue loue one another. 36 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow me nowe: but thou shalt follow me afterward. 37 Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, why can I not follow thee now? I will lay downe my life for thy sake. 38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not crowe, till thou haue denied me thrise.

14

1 Let not your heart be troubled: ye beleue in God, beleuee also in me. 2 In my Fathers house are many dwelling places: if it were not so, I would haue tolde you: I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go to prepare a place for you, I wil come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also. 4 And whither I goe, ye knowe, and the way ye knowe. 5 Thomas sayd vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: how can we then know ye way? 6 Iesus sayd vnto him, I am that Way, and that Trueth, and that Life. No man commeth vnto the Father, but by me. 7 If ye had knowen mee, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue seene him. 8 Philippe sayd vnto him, Lord, shewe vs thy Father, and it sufficeth vs. 9 Iesus sayd vnto him, I haue bene so long time with you, and hast thou not knowen mee, Philippe? he that hath seene me, hath seene my Father: how then sayest thou, Shewe vs thy Father? 10 Beleueest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father
is in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes. 11 Beleeue me, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me: at the least, beleeue me for the very workes sake. 12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that beleeueth in me, the workes that I doe, hee shall doe also, and greater then these shall he doe: for I goe vnto my Father. 13 And whatsoever ye aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. 14 If ye shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it. 15 If ye loue me, keepe my comandements, 16 And I wil pray the Father, and he shall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer, 17 Euen the Spirit of trueth, whom the world can not receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye knowe him: for he dwelleth with you, and shalbe in you. 18 I will not leve you fatherles: but I will come to you. 19 Yet a litle while, and the world shall see me no more, but ye shall see me: because I liue, ye shall liue also. 20 At that day shall ye knowe that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. 21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he that loueth me, shall be loued of my Father: and I will loue him, and wil shewe mine owne selfe to him. 22 Iudas sayd vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt shewe thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world? 23 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, If any man loue me, he will keepe my worde, and my Father will loue him, and we wil come vnto him, and wil dwell with him. 24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my wordes, and the worde which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me. 25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being present with you. 26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father wil send in my Name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, which I haue tolde you. 27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the worlde giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare. 28 Ye haue heard howe I saide vnto you, I goe away, and will come vnto you. If ye loued me, ye would verely reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I. 29 And nowe haue I spoken vnvo you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue. 30 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me. 31 But it is that the world may knowe that I loue my Father: and as the Father hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence.

15

1 I Am that true vine, and my Father is that husband man. 2 Euery branch that beareth not fruite in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite. 3 Nowe are ye cleane through the worde, which I haue spoken vnvo you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branche cannot beare fruite of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am that vine: ye are the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruite: for without me can ye doe nothing. 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branche, and withereth: and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they burne. 7 If ye abide in me, and my wordes abide in you, aske what ye wil, and it shalbe done to you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruite, and be made my disciples. 9 As the father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue in that my loue. 10 If ye shall keepe my commandements, ye shall abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers
commandements, and abide in his loue. 11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full. 12 This is my commandement, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you. 13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man bestoweth his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye doe whatsoeuer I commaund you. 15 Henceforth call I you not servuants: for the servaunt knoweth not what his master doeth: but I haue called you friends: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I made known to you. 16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you, that ye goe and bring forth fruite, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer ye shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you. 17 These things commaund I you, that ye loue one another. 18 If the world hate you, ye knowe that it hated me before you. 19 If ye were of the worlde, the world woulde loue his owne: but because ye are not of ye world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the word that I said vnto you, The servaunt is not greater then his master. If they haue persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if they haue kept my worde, they will also keepe yours. 21 But all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not known him that sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them, they shoulde not haue had sinne: but nowe haue they no cloe for their sinne. 23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done workes among them which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but nowe haue they both seene, and haue hated both me, and my Father. 25 But it is that the worde might be fulfilled, that is written in their Lawe, They hated me without a cause. 26 But when that Comforter shall come, whom I will send vnto you from the Father, even the Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me. 27 And ye shall witnesse also, because ye haue bene with me from the beginning.

16

1 These thinges haue I saide vnto you, that ye should not be offended. 2 They shall excommunicate you: yea, the time shall come, that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that he doeth God seruice. 3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not known ye Father, nor me. 4 But these thinges haue I tolde you, that when the houre shall come, ye might remember, that I tolde you them. And these thinges said I not vnto you from ye beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because I haue saide these thinges vnto you, your hearts are full of sorowe. 7 Yet I tell you the trueth, It is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you. 8 And when he is come, he will reprove the worlde of sinne, and of righteousness, and of judgement. 9 Of sinne, because they beleue not in me: 10 Of righteousness, because I goe to my Father, and ye shall see me no more: 11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged. 12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot berae them nowe. 13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he will leade you into all trueth: for he shall not speake of himselfe, but whatsoeuer he shall heare, shall he speake, and he will shew you the things to come. 14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receiue of mine, and shall shewe it vnto you. 15 All thinges that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shewe it vnto you.
16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and againe a little while, and ye shall see me: for I goe to the Father. 17 Then said some of his disciples among them selues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, A little while, and ye shall not see me, and againe, a little while, and ye shall see me, and, For I goe to the Father. 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we know not what he sayeth. 19 Now Jesus knew that they would aske him, and said vnto them, Doe ye enquire among your selues, of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and againe, a little while, and yee shall see me? 20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that ye shall wepe and lament, and the worlde shall reioyce: and ye shall sorowe, but your sorowe shalbe turned to ioye.

21 A woman when she trauelleth, hath sorowe, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the childe, she remembrethe no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world. 22 And ye nowe therefore are in sorowe: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shall reioyce, and your ioye shall no man take from you. 23 And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. Verely, verely I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you. 24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioye may be full. 25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shall no more speake to you in parables: but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. 26 At that day shall ye aske me in my Name, and I say not vnto you, that I will pray vnto the Father for you: 27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, and haue beleued that I came out from God. 28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the worlde: againe I leaque the worlde, and goe to the Father. 29 His disciples saide vnto him, Loe, nowe speakest thou plainly, and thou speakest no parable. 30 Nowe knowe wee that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleueue, that thou art come out from God. 31 Iesus answered them, Doe you beleuee nowe? 32 Beholde, the houre commeth, and is already come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man into his owne, and shall leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me. 33 These thinges haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in the world ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue over-come the world.

17

1 These things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and saide, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee, 2 As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast giuen him. 3 And this is life eternall, that they knowe thee to be the onely very God, and whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ. 4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe. 5 And nowe glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne selue, with the glorie which I had with thee before the world was. 6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy worde. 7 Nowe they knowe that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen me, are of thee. 8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued them, and haue knowne surely that I came out from thee, and haue beleued that thou hast sent me. 9 I pray for them: I pray not for the worlde, but for them which thou hast giuen me: for they are thine. 10 And al mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them. 11 And
nowe am I no more in the world, but these are in the worlde, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, euen them whom thou hast giuen mee, that they may bee one, as we are. 12 While I was with them in the worlde, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest me, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the childe of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And nowe come I to thee, and these things speake I in the worlde, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselves. 14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euill. 16 They are not of the worlde, as I am not of the world.

Sanctifie them with thy truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou diddest send me into the world, so haue I sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also may bee sanctified through the truth. 20 I praiue not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleue in mee, through their worde. 21 That they all may bee one, as thou, O Father, art in me, and I in thee: euen that they may be also one in vs, that the worlde may beleue that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory that thou gauest me, I haue giuen them, that they may be one, as we are one,

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the worlde may knowe that thou hast sent mee, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me. 24 Father, I will that they which thou hast giuen me, be with me euen where I am, that they may beholde that my glorie, which thou hast giuen mee: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world. 25 O righteous Father, the worlde also hath not knowne thee, but I haue knowne thee, and these haue known, that thou hast sent me. 26 And I haue declared vnto the thy Name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

18

1 When Iesus had spoken these things, hee went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples. 2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knewe also the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples. 3 Iudas then, after hee had receiued a band of men and officers of the high Priests, and of the Pharises, came thither with lanternes and torches, and weapons. 4 Then Iesus, knowing all things that shoulde come vnto him, went forth and said vnto them, Whom seeke yee? 5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus sayde vnto them, I am hee. Nowe Iudas also which betrayed him, stoode with them. 6 Assoone then as hee had saide vnto them, I am hee, they went away backwardes, and fell to the grounde.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whome seeke yee? And they sayd, Iesus of Nazareth. 8 Iesus answered, I said vnto you, that I am he: therefore if ye seeke me, let these go their way.

9 This was that the worde might be fulfilled which hee spake, Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none. 10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drewe it, and smote the hie Priests servaunt, and cut off his right eare. Nowe the seruants name was Malchus. 11 Then sayde Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sworde into the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cuppe which my Father hath giuen me? 12 Then the bande and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus, and bound him, 13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was father in lawe to Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yeere) 14 And Caiaphas was he, that gau counsel to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people. 15 Nowe Simon Peter folowed
Iesus, and another discipyle, and that discipyle was knowen of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest: 16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out the other discipyle which was knowen vnto the hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter. 17 Then saide the maide that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans dis-ciples? He sayd, I am not. 18 And the seruants and officers stoode there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was colde, and they warmed them-selues. And Peter also stood among them, and warmed himselfe. 19 (The hie Priest then asked Iesus of his dis-ciples, and of his doctrine. 20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world: I euer taught in the Synagogue and in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, and in secret haue I sayde nothing. 21 Why askest thou mee? aske them which heard mee what I sayde vnto them: beholde, they knowe what I sayd. 22 When he had spoken these things, one of the officers which stooode by, smote Iesus with his rod, saying, Answer-est thou the hie Priest so? 23 Iesus answered him, If I haue euill spoken, beare witnes of the euill: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou me? 24 Nowe Annas had sent him bound vnto Caiaphas the hie Priest) 25 And Simon Peter stooode and warmed him-selfe, and they said vnto him, Art not thou also of his discipyles? He denied it, and said, I am not. 26 One of the seruaunts of the hie Priest, his cousin whose eare Peter smote off, saide, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crewe. 28 Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas into the common hall. Nowe it was morning, and they themselves went not into the common hall, lest they should be defiled, but that they might eate the Passeouer. 29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What ac-cusation bring yee against this man?

30 They answered, and saide vnto him, If hee were not an euill doer, we woulde not haue deliuered him vnto thee. 31 Then sayde Pilate vnto them, Take yee him, and iudge him after your owne Lawe. Then the Iewes sayde vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death. 32 It was that the worde of Iesus might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die. 33 So Pilate entred into the common hall againe, and called Iesus, and sayde vnto him, Art thou the king of the Iewes? 34 Iesus answered him, Saiest thou that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of me? 35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Priestes haue deliuered thee vnto me. What hast thou done? 36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this worlde: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my seruants would surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but nowe is my king-dome not from hence. 37 Pilate then said vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King: for this cause am I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bare witnes vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce. 38 Pilate said vnto him, What is trueth? And when he had saide that, hee went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I finde in him no cause at all. 39 But you haue a custome, that I shoulde deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will yee then that I loose vnto you the King of ye Iewes? 40 Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas: nowe this Barabbas was a murtherer.

1 Then Pilate tooke Iesus and scourged him. 2 And the soldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple garment, 3 And saide, Haile, King of the Iewes. And they smote him with their roddes. 4 Then Pilate
went forth againe, and said vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may knowe, that I finde no fault in him at all. 5 Then came Iesus forth wearing a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And Pilate said vnto them, Beholde the man. 6 Then when the hie Priests and officers sawe him, they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto them, Take yee him and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him. 7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a lawe, and by our lawe he ought to die, because he made himselfe the Sonne of God. 8 When Pilate then heard that woorde, he was the more afraide. 9 And went againe into the common hall, and saide vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him none answere. 10 Then saide Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee? 11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne. 12 From thence forth Pilate sought to loose him, but the Iewes cried, saying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Ce-sars friende: for whosoever maketh himselfe a King, speaketh against Ce-sar. 13 When Pilate heard this woorde, hee brought Iesus forth, and sate downe in the judgement seate in a place called the Pauement, and in Hebrewe, Gabbatha. 14 And it was the Preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and hee sayde vnto the Iewes, Beholde your King. 15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate sayde vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The high Priestes answered, We haue no King but Cesar. 16 Then deliuered he him vnto them, to be crucified. And they tooke Iesus, and led him away. 17 And he bare his owne crosse, and came into a place named of dead mens Skulles, which is called in Hebrewe, Golgotha: 18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the middes. 19 And Pilate wrote also a title, and put it on the crosse, and it was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES. 20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was neere to the citie: and it was writ-ten in Hebrewe, Greeke and Latine. 21 Then saide the hie Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that he sayd, I am King of the Iewes. 22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written. 23 Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, toke his garments (and made foure partes, to euery souldier a part) and his coat: and the coat was without seame wouen from the toppe throughout. 24 Therefore they sayde one to another, Let vs not deuide it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. This was that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which sayth, They parted my garments among them, and on my coate did cast lots. So the souldiers did these things in deede. 25 Then standed by the crosse of Iesus his mother, and his mothers sister, Marie the wife of Cleopas, and Marie Magdalene. 26 And when Iesus sawe his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he said vnto his mother, Woman, beholde thy sonne. 27 Then saide he to the disciple, Beholde thy mother: and from that houre, the disciple tooke her home vnto him. 28 After, when Iesus knew that all things were performed, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, he said, I thirst. 29 And there was set a vessell full of vineger: and they filled a sponde with vineger: and put it about an Hyssope stalke, and put it to his mouth. 30 Nowe when Iesus had receiued of the vineger, he saide, It is finished, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost. 31 The Iewes then (because it was the Prepara-tion, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbeth day: for that Sabbath was an
hie day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken downe. 32 Then came the souldiers and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with Iesus. 33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that he was dead alreadie, they brake not his legs. 34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pearced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. 35 And he that sawe it, bare recorde, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleue it. 36 For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, Not a bone of him shalbe broken. 37 And againe an other Scripture saith, They shall see him whom they haue thrust through. 38 And after these things, Ioseph of Arimathiea (who was a disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate that he might take downe the bodie of Iesus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came then and tooke Iesus body. 39 And there came also Nicodemus (which first came to Iesus by night) and brought of myrrhe and aloes mingled together about an hundred pound. 40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wrapped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the maner of the Iewes is to bury. 41 And in that place where Iesus was crucified, was a garden, and in the garden a newe sepulchre, wherein was newer man yet laid. 42 There then laide they Iesus, because of the Iewes Preparation day, for the sepulchre was neere.

20

1 Nowe the first day of the weeke came Marie Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, vnto the sepulchre, and sawe the stone taken away from the tombe. 2 Then she ranne, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Iesus loued, and saide vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we knowe not where they haue laid him. 3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they came vnto the sepulchre. 4 So they ranne both together, but the other disciple did outrunne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. 5 And he stouped downe, and sawe the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in. 6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and sawe the linnen clothes ly, 7 And the kerchiefe that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe. 8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he sawe it, and beleued. 9 For as yet they knewe not the Scripture, That he must rise againe from the dead. 10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home. 11 But Marie stooode without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, 12 And sawe two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had laien. 13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue laide him. 14 When she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and sawe Iesus standing, and knewe not that it was Iesus. 15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing that he had bene the gardener, said vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Iesus saith vnto her, Marie. She turned her selfe, and said vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master. 17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to your Father, and to my God, and your God. 18 Marie Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her. 19 The
same day then at night, which was the first day of the weeke, and when the dooers were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the iewes, came Iesus and stooed in the middes, and saide to them, Peace be vnto you. 20 And when he had so saide, he shewed vnto them his handes, and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they had seene the Lord. 21 Then saide Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: as my father sent me, so sende I you. 22 And when he had saide that, he breathed on them, and saide vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost. 23 Whosoever sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: and whosoever sinnes ye reteine, they are retaine. 24 But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came. 25 The other disciples therefore saide vnto him, We haue seene the Lord: but he saide vnto them, Except I see in his handes the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and put mine hand into his side, I will not beleuee it. 26 And eight dayes after, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Then came Iesus, when the dooers were shut, and stood in the middes, and said, Peace be vnto you. 27 After saide he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but faithfull. 28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him, Thou art my Lord, and my God. 29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou beleueest: blessed are they that haue not seene, and haue beleued. 30 And many other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke. 31 But these things are written, that ye might beleuee, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in beleuing ye might haue life through his Name.

21 1 After these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and thus shewed he himselfe: 2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the sonsnes of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I go a fishing. They said vnto him, We also will goe with thee. They went their way and entred into a ship straightway, and that night caught they nothing. 4 But when the morning was nowe come, Iesus stoode on the shore: neuertheless the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus. 5 Iesus then said vnto them, Syrs, haue ye any meate? They answered him, No. 6 Then he said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. So they cast out, and they were not able at all to draw it, for the multitude of fishes. 7 Therefore said the disciple whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coate to him (for he was naked) and cast himselfe into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came by shippe (for they were not farre from land, but about two hundreth cubites) and they drewe the net with fishes. 9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they sawe hoate coales, and fish laide thereon, and bread. 10 Iesus saide vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue nowe caught. 11 Simon Peter stepped fourth and drewe the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundreth, fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken. 12 Iesus saide vnto them, Come, and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knewe that he was the Lord. 13 Iesus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen againe from the dead. 15 So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon Peter, Simon the sonne of Iona, louest thou
me more than these? He said unto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He said unto him, Feed my lambs. 16 He said to him again the second time, Simon the sonne of Iona, louest thou me? He said unto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He said unto him, Feed my sheepe. 17 He said unto him the third time, Simon the sonne of Iona, louest thou me? Peter was sorie because he said to him the third time, Louest thou me? and said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things: thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus said unto him, Feed my sheepe. 18 Verely, verely I say unto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, thou shalt stretch forth thine hands, and another shall gird thee, and lead thee whither thou wouldest not. 19 And this spake he signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had said this, he said to him, Follow me. 20 Then Peter turned about, and saw the disciple whom JESUS loued, folowing, which had also leaned on his breast at supper, and had saide, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? 21 When Peter therefore sawe him, he saide to Jesus, Lord, what shall this man doe? 22 Jesus said unto him, If I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee? follow thou me. 23 Then went this word abroade among the brethren, that this disciple shoulde not die. Yet Jesus saide not to him, He shall not die: but if I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee? 24 This is that disciple, which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimonie is true. 25 Nowe there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world coulde not conteine the bookes that shoulde be written, Amen.
THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

1 I have made the former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began to doe and teach, 2 Vntill the day that hee was taken vp, after that hee through the holy Ghost, had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles, whome hee had chosen: 3 To whome also he presented himselfe alieue after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being seene of them by the space of fourtie daies, and speaking of those thinges which appertaine to the kingdome of God. 4 And when he had gathered them together, he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promise of the Father, which sayde hee, yee haue heard of me. 5 For Iohn in deede baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost within these fewe daies. 6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel? 7 And hee saide vnto them, It is not for you to know the times, or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power, 8 But yee shall receive power of the holy Ghost, when hee shall come on you: and ye shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vppermost part of the earth. 9 And when he had spen these thinges, while they behelde, he was taken vp: for a cloude tooke him vp out of their sight. 10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as hee went, behelde, two men stoode by them in white apparell, 11 Which also sayde, Yee men of Galile, why stande yee gasing into heauen? This Jesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, as yee haue seene him goe into heauen. 12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount that is called the mount of Oliues, which is neere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath daies journey. 13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartle-mew, and Matthewe, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames brother. 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Marie the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren. 15 And in those dayes Peter stooide vp in the midst of the disciples, and sayde (nowe the number of names that were in one place were about an hundreth and twentyt.) 16 Yee men and brethren, this scripture must needes haue beene fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Davids spake before of Iudas, which was guide to them that tooke Iesus. 17 For hee was nombred with vs, and had obtained fellowship in this ministration. 18 He therefore hath purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie: and when he had throwen downe himselfe headlong, hee brast asunder in the middes, and all his bowels gushed out. 19 And it is known vnto all the inhabitants of Hierusalem, in so much, that that field is called in their owne language, Aceldama, That is, the field of blood. 20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation be void, and let no man dwel therein: also, Let another take his charge. 21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus was conuersant among vs, 22 Beginning from the baptism of Iohn vnto the day that hee was taken vp from vs, must one of them bee made a witnesse with vs of his resurrection. 23 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthiastes. 24 And they praied, saying, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen, 25 That he may take the roume of this ministration and Apostleship,
from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place. 26 Then they gaue forth their lottes: and the lotte fell on Matthias, and hee was by a common consent counted with the eleuen Apostles.

2

1 And when the day of Pentecost was come, they were al with one accord in one place. 2 And suddenly there came a sounde from heauen, as of a rushing and mightie winde, and it filled all the house where they sate. 3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon eche of them. 4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance. 5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen. 6 Nowe when this was noised, the multitude came together and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language. 7 And they wondered al, and marueiled, saying among themselues, Beholde, are not all these which speake, of Galile? 8 How then heare we euery man our owne language, wherein we were borne? 9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia, 10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the partes of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, and Iewes, and Proselytes, 11 Creetes, and Arabians: wee hearde them speake in our owne tongues the wonderful works of God. 12 They were all then amased, and douted, saying one to another, What may this be? 13 And others mocked, and saide, They are full of newe wine. 14 But Peter standing with ye Eleuens, lift vp his voice, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, and ye all that inhabite Hierusalem, be this knowne vnto you, and hearken vnto my worordes. 15 For these are not drunken, as yee suppose, since it is but the third houre of the day. 16 But this is that, which was spoken by the Prophet Ioel, 17 And it shalbe in the last daies, saith God, I wil powre out of my Spiriure vpon al flesh, and your sonnes, and your daughters shall prophecie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreams. 18 And on my seruauntes, and on mine handmaides I will powre out of my Spiriure in those daies, and they shall prophecie. 19 And I wil shew wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, blood, and fire, and the vapour of smoke. 20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darkenesse, and the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come. 21 And it shalbe, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued. 22 Yee men of Israel, heare these woordes, JESUS of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you with great workes, and wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the middes of you, as yee your selues also knowe: 23 Him, I say, being deliuered by the determinate counsell, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked handes you haue crucified and slaine. 24 Whome God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorrowes of death, because it was vnpossible that he should be holden of it. 25 For Davids sayeth concerning him, I beheld the Lord alwaies before me: for hee is at my right hand, that I should not be shaken. 26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad, and moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope. 27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neither wilt suffer thine Holy one to see corruption. 28 Thou hast shewed me the waies of life, and shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance. 29 Men and brethren, I may boldly speake vnto you of the Patriarke Dauid, that hee is both dead and buried, and
his sepulchre remaineth with vs vn
to this day. 30 Therefore, seeing hee
was a Prophet, and knewe that God
had sworn with an othe to him,
that of the fruite of his loynes hee
woulde raise vp Christ concerning the
fleshe, to set him vpon his throne,
31 Hee knowing this before, spake of
the resurrection of Christ, that his
soule should not bee left in graue,
neither his flesh should see corrup-
tion. 32 This Iesus hath God raised vp,
whereof we all are witnesses. 33 Since
then that he by the right hande of God
hath bene exaltede, and hath receiued
of his Father the promise of the holy
Ghost, hee hath shed forth this
which yee nowe see and heare. 34 For
Dauid is not ascended into heauen,
but he sayth, The Lord sayd to my
Lord, Sit at my right hande, 35 Vntill
I make thine enemies thy footesteole.
36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel
know for a suretie, that God hath
made him both Lord, and Christ, this
Iesus, I say, whom yee haue cruci-
fied. 37 Now when they heard it, they
were pricked in their hearts, and
said vnfo Peter and the other Apo-
stles, Men and brethren, what shal we
doe? 38 Then Peter said vnfo them,
Amend your liues, and bee baptized
every one of you in the Name of Jesus
Christ for the remission of sinnes:
and ye shal receiue the gift of the
holy Ghost. 39 For the promise is made
vnfo you, and to your children, and to
all that are a farre off, even as many
as the Lord our God shall call. 40 And
with many other words he besought
and exhorted them, saying, Saue your
selues from this froward generation.
41 Then they that gladly receiued his
word, were baptized: and the same
day there were added to the Church
about three thousand soules. 42 And
they continued in the Apostles doc-
trine, and fellowship, and breaking of
bread, and prayers. 43 And feare came
vpon euery soule: and many wonders
and signes were done by ye Apostles.
44 And all that beleueed, were in one
place, and had all things common.

45 And they sold their possessions and
goods, and parted them to all me, as
every one had need. 46 And they con-
tinued dayly with one accord in the
Temple, and breaking bread at home,
did eate their meate together with
gladnesse and singlenesse of heart,
47 Praying God, and had fauour with
all the people: and the Lord added to
the Church from day to day, such as
should be saued.

3

Nowe Peter and Iohn went vp
together into the Temple, at the ninth
houre of prayer. 2 And a certaine man
which was a creeple from his mothers
wombe, was caried, whom they layde
dayly at the gate of the Temple called
Beautifull, to aske almes of them that
entred into ye Temple. 3 Who seeing
Peter and Iohn, that they would enter
into the Temple, desired to receiue
an almes. 4 And Peter earnestly be-
holding him with Iohn, said, Looke
ons. 5 And hee gaue heede vnfo
them, trusting to receiue some thing
of them. 6 Then said Peter, Siluer
and gold haue I none, but such as I
haue, that giue I thee: In the Name
of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp
and walke. 7 And hee tooke him
by the right hand, and lift him vp,
and immediately his feete and ankle
bones receiued strength. 8 And he
leaped vp, stooed, and walked, and
entred with them into the Temple,
walking and leaping, and praying
God. 9 And all the people sawe him
walke, and praying God. 10 And
they knewe him, that it was he which
sate for the almes at the Beautifull
gate of the Temple: and they were
amased, and sore astonied at that,
which was come vnfo him. 11 And as
the creeple which was healed, held
Peter and Iohn, all the people ranne
amased vnfo them in the porch which
is called Salomons. 12 So when Peter
saw it, he answered vnfo the people,
Ye me of Israel, why marueile ye at
this? or why looke ye so stedfastly
on vs, as though by our owne power
or godlines, we had made this man go? 13 The God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed, and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had judged him to be deliuered. 14 But ye denied the Holy one and the lust, and desired a murtherer to be giuen you, 15 And killed the Lord of life, whome God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses. 16 And his Name hath made this man sound, whom ye see, and know, through faith in his Name: and the faith which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfecte health of his whole body in the presence of you all. 17 And now brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your gobernours. 18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath thus fulfilled. 19 Amend your liues therefore, and turne, that your sinnes may be put away, whe the time of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. 20 And he shall sende Jesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you, 21 Whome the heauen must containe vntill the time that all things be restored, which God had spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began. 22 For Moses said vnto the Fathers, The Lord your God shall raise vp vnto you a Prophet, euene of your brethren, like vnto me: ye shall heare him in all things, whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you. 23 For it shalbe that euery person which shall not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed out of the people. 24 Also all the Prophets from Samuel, and thencefoorth as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretold of these dayes. 25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the covenant, which God hath made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, Euen in thy seede shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. 26 First vnto you hath God raysed vp his Sonne Iesus, and him hee hath sent to blesse you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

4

1 And as they spake vnto the people, the Priestes and the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sadduces came vpon them, 2 Taking it grievously that they taught the people, and preached in Jesus Name the resurrection from the dead. 3 And they layde handes on them, and put them in holde, vntill the next day: for it was now euentide. 4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleued, and the number of the men was about fiue thousand. 5 And it came to passe on the morow, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem, 6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the hie Priestes. 7 And whe they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this? 8 Then Peter ful of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel, 9 For as much as we this day are examined of the good deede done to the impotent man, to wit, by what meanes he is made whole, 10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified, whome God raised againe from the dead, euene by him doth this man stand here before you, whole. 11 This is the stone cast aside of you builders which is become the head of the corner. 12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for among men there is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, whereby we must be saued. 13 Now when they sawe the boldnes of Peter and Iohn, and understooode that they were vnlearned men and without knowledge, they marueiled, and knew them, that they had bin with Iesus: 14 And beholding also the man which was healed
standing with them, they had nothing to say against it. 15 Then they commanded them to goe aside out of the Council, and conferred among themselves, 16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, and it is openly known to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: and we cannot denie it. 17 But that it be noyesd no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name. 18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wise they should speake or teach in the Name of Iesus. 19 But Peter and John answered vnto them, and said, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, judge ye. 20 For we cannot but speake the things which we haue seene and heard. 21 So they threatened them, and let them goe, and found nothing how to punish them, because of the people: for all men praised God for that which was done. 22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeeres olde, on whome this miracle of healing was shewed. 23 Then assoone as they were let goe, they came to their fellows, and shewed all that the hie Priestes and Elders had said vnto them. 24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyces to God with one accord, and said, O Lord, thou art the God which hast made the heaue, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them, 25 Which by the mouth of thy seruant Dauid hast saide, Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things? 26 The Kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ. 27 For doultesse, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whome thou haddest anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel gathered themselves together, 28 To doe whatsoever thine hand, and thy counsell had determined before to be done. 29 And nowe, O Lord, beholde their threatenings, and graunt vnto thy seruants with all boldnesse to speake thy word, 30 So that thou stretch forth thine hand, that healing, and signes, and wonders may be done by the Name of thine holy Sonne Iesus. 31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they speake the word of God boldly. 32 And the multitude of them that beleued, were of one heart, and of one soule: neither any of them said, that any thing of that which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common. 33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all. 34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessours of landes or houses, solde them, and brought the price of the things that were solde, 35 And layde it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euerie man, according as he had neede. 36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is by interpretation the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus, 37 Where as he had land, solde it, and brought the money, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete.

5

1 But a certayne man named Ana-nias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession, 2 And kept away part of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and layde it downe at the Apostles feete. 3 Then saide Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lye vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away part of the price of this possession? 4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was solde, was it not in thine owne power? howe is it
that thou hast conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lyed vn to men, but vn to God. 5 Now when Ananias heard these wordes, he fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things. 6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, and caried him out, and buried him. 7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done. 8 And Peter sayd vn to her, Tell me, solde ye the land for so much? And she sayd, Yea, for so much. 9 Then Peter sayde vn to her, Why haue ye agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? beholde, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband, are at the doore, and shall carie thee out. 10 Then she fell downe straightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in, and found her dead, and caried her out, and buried her by her husband. 11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard these things. 12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles were many signes and wonders shewed among the people (and they were all with one accord in Salomons porche. 13 And of the other durst no man ioyne him selfe to them: neuertheless the people magnified them. 14 Also the number of them that beleued in the Lord, both of men and women, grewe more and more) 15 In so much that they brought the sicke into the streetes, and layd them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadowe of Peter, when he came by, might shadow some of them. 16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vn to Hierusalem, bringing sicke folks, and them which were vexed with vniclean spirits, who were all healed. 17 Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him (which was the sect of the Sadduces) and were full of indignation, 18 And laide hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison. 19 But the Angel of the Lord, by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and sayd, 20 Go your way, and stand in the Temple, and speake to the people, all the wordes of this life. 21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Counciill together, and all the Elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought. 22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and tolde it, 23 Saying, Certainely we founde the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within. 24 Then when the chiefe Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the hie Priestes heard these things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would growe. 25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Beholde, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teach the people. 26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, lest they should haue bene stoned) 27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Counciill, and the chiefe Priest asked them, 28 Saying, Did not we straightly command you, that ye should not teach in this Name? and behold, ye haue filled Hierusale with your doctrine, and ye would bring this mans blood vp on vs. 29 Then Peter and the Apostles answered, and sayd, We ought rather to obey God then men. 30 The God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree. 31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour, to glie repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sinnes. 32 And we are his witnesses concerning these things which we
say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whence God hath giuen to them that obey him. 33 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slay them. 34 Then stoode there vp in the Councill a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space, 35 And sayd vnsto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intende to doe touching these men. 36 For before these times, rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe, to whom resorted a number of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. 37 After this man, arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, and drew away much people after him: hee also perished, and all that obeyed him, were scattered abroad. 38 And nowe I say vnsto you, Refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke be of men, it will come to nought: 39 But if it be of God, ye can not destroy it, lest ye be found euene fighters against God. 40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe. 41 So they departed from the Councill, rejoycing, that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name. 42 And dayly in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach, and preach Iesus Christ.

6

1 And in those dayes, as the number of ye disciples grewe, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards ye Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the dayly ministring. 2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and sayd, It is not meete that we should leaue the worde of God to serue the tables. 3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost, and of wise-dome, which we may appoint to this busines. 4 And we will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the worde. 5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen a man full of fauith and of the holy Ghost, and Philippe, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a Proselyte of Antiochia, 6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they prayed, and layed their hands on them. 7 And the worde of God increased, and the number of the disciplets was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith. 8 Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people. 9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertines, and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen. 10 But they were not able to resist the wis-dome, and the Spirit by the which he spake. 11 Then they suborned men, which saide, We haue heard him speake blasphemous wordes against Moses, and God. 12 Thus they moued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpone him, caught him, and brought him to the Councill, 13 And set forth false witnesses, which sayd, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous wordes against this holy place, and the Law. 14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ordinances, which Moses gaue vs. 15 And as all that sate in the Councill, looked stedfastly on him, they saw his face as it had bene the face of an Angel.
7

1 Then said the chiefe Priest, Are these things so? 2 And he sayd, Ye men, brethren and Fathers, hearken. That God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, 3 And said vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kin- dred, and come into the land, which I shall shewe thee. 4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, God brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye now dwell, 5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the breth the of a foote: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet hee had no childe. 6 But God spake thus, that his seede should be a soiourner in a strange land: and that they should keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euill foure hundridth yeeres. 7 But the nation to whom he should be in bondage, will I judge, sayth God: and after that, they shall come forth and serue me in this place. 8 Hee gaue him also the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begate Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and Isaac begate Iacob, and Iacob the twelve Patriarkes. 9 And the Patriarkes moued with enuiue, solde Ioseph into Egypt: but God was with him, 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and gaue him favoour and wisdome in the sight of Pharao King of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and ouer his whole house. 11 Then came there a famine ouer all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance. 12 But when Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first: 13 And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, and Iosephs kindred was made knowen vnto Pharao. 14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and all his kindred, euen threescore and fiftenee soules. 15 So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he dyed, and our fathers, 16 And were remoued into Sychem, and were put in the sepul- chre, that Abraham had bought for money of the sons of Emor, sonne of Sychem. 17 But when the time of the promise drewe neere, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people grewe and multiplied in Egypt, 18 Till another King arose, which knewe not Ioseph. 19 The same dealt subtily with our kindred, and euill entreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their yong children, that they should not remaine alio. 20 The same time was Moses borne, and was accepta- ble vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths. 21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne. 22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdome of the Egyptians, and was mightie in wordes and in deedes. 23 Nowe when he was full fourtie yeere olde, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the chil- dren of Israel. 24 And whe he saw one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and auenged his quarell that had the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian. 25 For hee supposed his brethren would haue vnderstand, that God by his hande should giue them deliuerance: but they vnder- stoode it not. 26 And the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto them as they stroue, and woulde haue set them at one againe, saying, Syrs, ye are brethren: why doe ye wrong one to another? 27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a judge ouer vs? 28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday? 29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonsnes. 30 And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the wildernes of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of
fire, in a bush. 31 And when Moses sawe it, hee wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to consider it, the voyce of the Lord came vnto him, saying, 32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold it. 33 Then the Lord said to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground. 34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groining, and am come downe to deliuer them: and nowe come, and I will sende thee into Egypt. 35 This Moses whome they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince and a judge? the same God sent for a prince, and a deliueringer by the hand of the Angel, which appeared to him in the bush. 36 Hee brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles in the land of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernes fourtie yeres. 37 This is that Moses, which saide vnto the children of Israel, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you, euen of your brethren, like vnto me: him shall ye heare. 38 This is he that was in the Congregation, in the wildernes with the Angell, which spake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs. 39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but refused, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt: 40 Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods that may goe before vs: for we knowe not what is become of this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt. 41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne handes. 42 Then God turned himselfe away, and gaue them vp to serue the host of heauen, as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, O house of Israel, haue ye offerd to me slaine beasts and sacrificces by the space of fourtie yeres in

the wildernes? 43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan, figures, which ye made to worship them: therefore I will carie you away beyond Babylon. 44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnes, in the wildernes, as hee had appointed, speaking vnto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seene. 45 Which tabernacle also our fathers receiued, and brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid: 46 Who found fauour before God, and desired that hee might finde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob. 47 But Salomon built him an house. 48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with handes, as saith the Prophet, 49 Heauen is my throne, and earth is my footsteoole: what house wil ye build for me, saith the Lord? or what place is it that I should rest in? 50 Hath not mine hand made all these things? 51 Ye stiffenecked and of vnclircumcised heartes and eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do you. 52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? and they haue slaine them, which shewed before of the comming of that Iust, of whom ye are now the betrayers and murtherers. 53 Which haue receiued the Lawe by the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it. 54 But when they heard these things, their heartes brast for anger, and they gnashed at him with their teeth. 55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of God, 56 And said, Beholde, I see the heauens open, and the Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God. 57 Then they gaue a shoute with a loude voyce, and stopped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at once, 58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the
witnesses layd downe their clothes at a yong mans feete, named Saul. 59 And they stonned Steuen, who calleth on God, and said, Lord Jesus, receiue my spirit. 60 And he kneeled downe, and cried with a loude voyce, Lord, laye not this sinne to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he slept.

8

1 And Saul consented to his death, and at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad thorow the regions of Iuda and of Samaria, except the Apostles. 2 Then certaine men fearing God, caried Steuen amongst them, to be buried, and made great lamentation for him. 3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and entred into euery house, and drewe out both men and women, and put them into prison. 4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went to and from preaching the worde. 5 Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them. 6 And the people gaue heed vnto those things which Philippe spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. 7 For vn cleane spirits crying with a loud voyce, came out of many that were possessed of them: and many taken with palsyes, and that halted, were healed. 8 And there was great joy in that citie. 9 And there was before in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some great man. 10 To whome they gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God. 11 And they gaue heed vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries. 12 But assoone as they beleued Philip, which preached the thinges that concerned the kingdom of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women. 13 Then Simon himselfe beleued also and was baptized, and continued with Philippe, and wondred, when he sawe the signes and great miracles which were done. 14 Nowe when the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the worde of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn. 15 Which whe they were come downe, prayed for them, that they might receiue the holy Ghost. 16 (For as yet, hee was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus.) 17 Then laid they their handes on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost. 18 And when Simon sawe, that through laying on of the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was giuen, he offerd them money, 19 Saying, Giue mee also this power, that on whomsoever I lay the handes, he may receiue the holy Ghost. 20 Then saide Peter vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may be obtained with money. 21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowship in this businesse: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God. 22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednes, and pray God, that if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be forgien thee. 23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternes, and in the bonde of iniquitie. 24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me. 25 So they, when they had testified and preached the worde of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in many townes of the Samaritans. 26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe towards the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is waste. 27 And hee arose and went on: and beholde, a certaine Eunuche
of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe Gouvernour, who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to Hierusalem to worship: 28 And as he returned sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet. 29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Go neere and ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet. 30 And Philip ranne thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and said, But vnderstandest thou what thou readest? 31 And he saide, Howe can I, except I had a guide? And he desired Philip, that he would come vp and sit with him. 32 Nowe the place of the Scripture which he read, was this, Hee was lead as a sheepe to the slaughter: and like a lambe domme before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. 33 In his humilitie his judgement hath bene exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth. 34 Then the Eunuche answered Philippe, and saide, I pray thee of whom speakest the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man? 35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus. 36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuche said, See, here is water: what doeth let me to be baptized? 37 And Philippe said vnto him, If thou beleuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then he answered, and saide, I beleuee that that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God. 38 Then he commanded the charet to stand stil: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuche, and he baptized him. 39 And assoone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuche sawe him no more: so he went on his way reioycing. 40 But Philippe was found at Azotus, and he walked to and from preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

9  1 And Saul yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of ye Lord, went vnto the hie Priest, 2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any that were of that way (either men or women) hee might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem. 3 Now as he iourneyed, it came to passe that as he was come neere to Damascus, suddenly there shined rounde about him a light from heauen. 4 And hee fell to the earth, and heard a voyce, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? 5 And he sayd, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord sayd, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against pricks. 6 He then both trembling and astonied, sayd, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord sayd vnto him, Arise and goe into the citie, and it shall be tolde thee what thou shalt doe. 7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stood amased, hearing his voyce, but seeing no man. 8 And Saul arose from the ground, and opened his eyes, but sawe no man. Then led they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus, 9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor dranke. 10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ananias, and to him sayd the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he sayd, Beholde, I am here Lord. 11 Then the Lord sayd vnto him, Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Judas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for beholde, he prayeth. 12 (And he sawe in a vision a man named Ananias comming in to him, and putting his hands on him, that he might receiue his sight.) 13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, howe much euill hee hath done to thy saints at Hierusalem. 14 Moreouer here hee hath authoritie of the hie Priestes, to binde all that call on thy Name. 15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Go thy
way: for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel. 16 For I will shewe him, howe many things he must suffer for my Names sake. 17 Then Ananias went his way, and entred into that house, and put his hands on him, and sayd, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (euen Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost. 18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had bene scales, and suddenly he receiued sight, and arose, and was baptized, 19 And receiued meate, and was strengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus. 20 And straightway hee preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God, 21 So that all that heard him, were amased, and sayde, Is not this hee, that made hauock of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent, that hee should bring them bound vnto the hie Priests? 22 But Saul encreased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming, that this was that Christ. 23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell together, to kill him, 24 But their laying awaye was knowne of Saul: nowe they watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him. 25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and put him through the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket. 26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe with the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and beleuued not that he was a disciple. 27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared to them, howe hee had seene the Lord in the way, and that hee had spoken vnto him, and howe he had spoken boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus. 28 And hee was conversant with them at Hierusalem, 29 And spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and spake and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him. 30 But when the brethren knewe it, they brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. 31 Then had the Churches rest through all Iuda, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified and walked in the feare of the Lord, and were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost. 32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all quarters, hee came also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda. 33 And there he found a certaine man named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was sick of the palsie. 34 Then said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise and trusse thy couch together. And he arose immediately. 35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, sawe him, and turned to the Lord. 36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine woman, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) she was full of good workes and almes which she did. 37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sick and dyed: and when they had washed her, they layd her in an vpper chamber. 38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring that he would not delay to come vnto them. 39 Then Peter arose and came with them: and when hee was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes stoode by him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments, which Dorcas made, while she was with them. 40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turned him to the body, and sayd, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she sawe Peter, sate vp. 41 Then he gave her the hand and lift her vp, and
called the Saints and widowes, and restored her alue. 42 And it was knowne throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord. 43 And it came to passe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a Tanner.

10 1 Futhermore there was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian band, 2 A deoute man, and one that feared God with all his houeholde, which gave much almes to the people, and prayed God continually. 3 He sawe in a vision euidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius. 4 But when hee looked on him, hee was afryed, and sayd, What is it, Lord? and he sayd vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God. 5 Nowe therefore send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 6 Hee lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall telle thee what thou oughtest to doe. 7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants, and a souldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him, 8 And tolde them all things, and sent them to Ioppa. 9 On the morow as they went on their iourney, and drew neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the six houre. 10 Then waxed hee an hungred, and would haue eaten: but while they made some thing ready, he fell into a trance. 11 And hee sawe heauen opened, and a certaine vessell come downe vnto him, as it had bene a great sheete, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth. 12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beastes and creeping things, and foules of the heauen. 13 And there came a voyce to him, Arise, Peter: kill, and eate. 14 But Peter sayd, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vnclene. 15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not. 16 This was so done thrise: and the vessell was drawn vp againe into heauen. 17 Nowe while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, meant, beholde, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had inquired for Simons house, and stoode at the gate, 18 And called, and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there. 19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit sayde vnto him, Beholde, three men seeke thee. 20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, and doute nothing: For I haue sent them. 21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and sayd, Beholde, I am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come? 22 And they sayd, Cornelius the captain, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare thy wordes. 23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, and the next day, Peter went foorth with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him. 24 And the day after, they entred into Cesarea. Nowe Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsemen, and special friends. 25 And it came to passe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him. 26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euene I my selfe am a man. 27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and found many that were come together. 28 And he sayd vnto them, Ye know that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed
me, that I should not call any man polluted, or vn cleane. 29 Therefore came I vnto you without saying nay, when I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye sent for me? 30 Then Cornelius sayd, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre, I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, and beholde, a man stood before me in bright clothing, 31 And sayd, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God. 32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter (he is lodged in the house of Simon a Tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee. 33 Then sent I for thee immediately, and thou hast well done to come. Nowe therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God. 34 Then Peter opened his mouth, and sayd, Of a trueth I perceiue, that God is no accepter of persons. 35 But in euery nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him. 36 Ye know the worde which God hath sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which is Lord of all: 37 Even the worde which came through all Iudea, beginning in Galile, after the baptisme which Iohn preached. 38 To wit, howe God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him. 39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slewed, hanging him on a tree. 40 Him God rysed vp the third day, and caused that he was shewed openly: 41 Not to all the people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before of God, euven to vs which did eate and drinke with him, after he arose from the dead. 42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie, that it is he that is ordained of God a judge of quicke and dead. 43 To him also giue all the Prophets witnesse, that through his Name all that beleue in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes. 44 While Peter yet spake these wordes, the holy Ghost fell on al them which heard the word. 45 So they of the circumcision which beleued, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost. 46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter, 47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as we? 48 So he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

11

1 Nowe the Apostles and the brethren that were in Iudea, heard, that the Gentiles had also receiued the worde of God. 2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him, 3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vn circumcised, and hast eaten with them. 4 Then Peter beganne, and expounded the thing in order to them, saying, 5 I was in the citie of Ioppa, praying, and in a trance I sawe this vision, A certaine vessell comming downe as it had bene a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me. 6 Towarde the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and sawe foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beastes, and creeping things, and foules of the heauen. 7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay and eate. 8 And I said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vn cleane hath at any time entred into my mouth. 9 But the voyce answered me the seconde time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not. 10 And this was done three times, and
all were taken vp againe into heauen. 11 Then behold, immediatly there were three men already come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me. 12 And the Spirit saide vnto me, that I should go with them, without doubting: moreover these sixe brethren came with me, and we entred into the mans house. 13 And he shewed vs, howe he had seene an Angel in his house, which stooed and said to him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter. 14 He shall speake wordes vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine house shalbe saued. 15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, euens as vpon vs at the beginning. 16 Then I remembred the word of the Lord, howe he said, Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost. 17 For as much then as God gaue them a like gift, as he did vnto vs, when we beleueed in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God? 18 When they heard these things, they helde their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles graunted repentance vnto life. 19 And they which were scattered abroade because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went throughout till they came vnto Phenie and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the worde to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. 20 Now some of them were men of Cyprus and of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus. 21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleueed and turned vnto the Lord. 22 Then tydings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem, and they sent foorth Barnabas, that he should goe vnto Antiochia. 23 Who when he was come and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord. 24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned them selues vnto the Lord. 25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul: 26 And when he had founde him, he brought him vnto Antiochia: and it came to passe that a whole yere they were conversant with ye Church, and taught much people, in so much that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia. 27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia. 28 And there stooed vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout all the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar. 29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, purposed to sende succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea. 30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

12
1 Nowe about that time, Herod the King stretched forth his hands to vexe certaine of the Church, 2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword. 3 And when he sawe that it pleased the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take Peter also (then were the dayes of vnleauened bread.) 4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, and deliered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intending after the Passeouer to bring him forth to the people. 5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was made of ye Church vnto God for him. 6 And when Herod woulde haue brought him out vnto the people, the same night slept Peter betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore, kept the prison. 7 And behold the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and a light shined in the house, and he smote Peter on the side, and raysed him vp, saying, Arise quickly. And his chaines fell off from his
And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a maide came foorth to hearken, named Rhode, But when she knew Peters voyce, she opened not the entrie doore for gladnesse, but ranne in, and tolde howe Peter stood before the entrie. But they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet she affirmed it constantly, that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel. But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and sawe him, they were astonied. And he beckened vnto them with the hand, to hold their peace, and told them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he saide, Goe shewe these things vnto Iames and to the brethren: and he departed and went into an other place. Nowe assoone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter. And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them to be led to be punished. And he went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and there abode.

Then Herod was angrie with them of Tyrus and Sidon, but they came all with one accord vnto him, and perswaded Blastus the Kings Chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings land. And vpon a day appointed, Herod arrayed himselfe in royall apparell, and sate on the judgement seate, and made an oration vnto them. And the people gaue a shoute, saying, The voyce of God, and not of man. But immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not glorie vnto God, so that he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost. And the worde of God grewe, and multiplied. So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

There were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bin brought vp with Herod the Tetrarche) and Saul. Nowe as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them. Then fasted they and prayed, and layde their hands on them, and let them goe. And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sayled to Cyprus. And when they were at Salamin, they preached the worde of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their minister. So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Bariesus. Which was with the Deutie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him.
Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the woord of God. 8 But Elymas, ye sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith. 9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, 10 And sayde, O full of all subtillie and all mischeife, the childe of the deuill, and enemie of all rightouesnesse, wilt thou not cease to perueret the straight waies of the Lord? 11 Nowe therefore behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediately there fel on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand. 12 Then the Deputie when he sawe what was done, beleued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord. 13 Nowe when Paul and they that were with him were departed by shippe from Paphus, they came to Perga a citie of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem. 14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia a citie of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on ye Sabbath day, and sate downe. 15 And after the lecture of the Law and Prophets, the rulers of ye Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on. 16 Then Paul stoode vp and beckened with the hand, and sayde, Men of Israel, and yee that feare God, hearken. 17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought them out thereof. 18 And about the time of fourtie yeeres, suffered he their maners in the wildernesse. 19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, and deuided their lad to them by lot. 20 Then afterward he gaue vnto them Judges about four hundredth and fiftie yeeres, vnto the time of Samuel the Prophet. 21 So after that, they desired a King, and God gaue vnto them Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of ye tribe of Benjamin, by the space of fourty yeres. 22 And after he had taken him away, he raised vp Dauid to be their King, of whom he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which will doe all things that I will. 23 Of this mans seede hath God according to his promise raised vp to Israel, ye Sauiour Iesus: 24 When Iohn had first preached before his coming the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel. 25 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, he saide, Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but beholde, there commeth one after me, whose shoee of his feete I am not worthy to loose. 26 Yee men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the woord of this salvation sent. 27 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knewe him not, nor yet the woordes of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him. 28 And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate to kill him. 29 And when they had fulfilled all things that were written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and put him in a sepulchre. 30 But God raised him vp from the dead. 31 And hee was seene many dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people. 32 And we declare vnto you, that touching the promise made vnto the fathers, 33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that he raised vp Iesus, euen as it is written in the seconde Psalme, Thou art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee. 34 Nowe as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, no more to returne to
corruption, he hath said thus, I wilt give you the holy things of Dauid, which are faithfull. 35 Wherefore hee sayeth also in another place, Thou wilt not suffer thine Holy one to see corruption. 36 Howbeit, Dauid after hee had serued his time by the counsell of God, hee slept, and was laid with his fathers, and sawe corruption. 37 But he whom God raised vp, sawe no corruption. 38 Be it kn own vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes. 39 And from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the Law of Moses, by him euerie one that beleueueth, is justified. 40 Beware therefore lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in the Prophets, 41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and vanish away: for I woorke a woorke in your daies, a woorke which yee shall not beleue, if a man would declare it you. 42 And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought, that they would preache these woordes to them the next Sabbath day. 43 Nowe when the congregation was dissolued, many of the Iewes and Proselytes that feared God, followed Paul and Barnabas, which spake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God. 44 And ye next Sabbath day came almost the whole citie together, to heare the worde of God. 45 But when the Iewes sawe the people, they were full of enuie, and spake against those things, which were spoken of Paul, contrarying them, and railing on them. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas spake boldly, and sayde, It was necessarie that the worde of God shoulde first haue beene spoken vnto you: but seeing yee put it from you, and judge your selues vnworthie of euerlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles. 47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be the salvation vnto the end of the world. 48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, and glorified the worde of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life, beleueued. 49 Thus the worde of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrely. 50 But the Iewes stirred certaine deuoute and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes. 51 But they shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium. 52 And the di sciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

14

1 And it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleueued. 2 And the vnbeleeuwing Iewes stirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren. 3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and spake boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimonie vnto the wo ord of his grace, and caused signes and woderes to be done by their hands. 4 But the multitude of the city was deuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles. 5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them vio lence, and to stone them, 6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about, 7 And there preached the Gospel. 8 Nowe there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, which was a crepe from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked. 9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed, 10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vp right on thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked. 11 Then when the people
saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in ye speach of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men. 12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because hee was the chiefe speaker. 13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, and would have sacrificed with the people. 14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying. 15 And saying, O men, why doe yee these things? We are euem men subject to the like passions that yee be, and preache vnto you, that yee shoulde turne from these vaine things vnto the liuing God, which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are: 16 Who in times past suffered all the Gentiles to walke in their owne waies. 17 Neuertheless, hee left not him selfe without witnes, in that hee did good and gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with foode, and gladnesse. 18 And speaking these things, scarce appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them. 19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia and Iconium, which when they had persuaded the people, stoned Paul, and drewe him out of the citie, supposing he had bene dead. 20 Howbeit, as the disciples stooode rounde about him, hee arose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day hee departed with Barnabas to Derbe. 21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Gospel to that citie, and had taught many, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia. 22 Confirming the disciples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, affirming that we must through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God. 23 And when they had ordeyned them Elders by election in euery Church, and prayed, and fasted, they commended them to the Lord in whome they beleueed. 24 Thus they went throughout Pisidia, and came to Pamphylia. 25 And when they had preached the woorde in Perga, they came downe to Attalia, 26 And thence sailed to Antiochia, from whence they had bene comended vnto the grace of God, to the woorke, which they had fulfilled. 27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all the things that God had done by them, and howe he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles. 28 So there they abode a long time with the disciples.

15

1 Then came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, saying, Except ye be circumcised after the maner of Moses, ye cannot be saued. 2 And when there was great dissension, and disputation by Paul and Barnabas against them, they ordeyned that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question. 3 Thus being brought forth by ye Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren. 4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them. 5 But said they, certaine of the sect of the Pharises, which did beleue, rose vp, saying, that it was needefull to circumcise them, and to commaund them to kepe the lawe of Moses. 6 Then the Apostles and Elders came together to looke to this matter. 7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, Ye men and brethren, ye know that a good while ago, among vs God chose out me, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the worde of the Gospel, and beleue. 8 And
God which knoweth the heartes, bare them witness, in giuing vnnto them ye holy Ghost euens as he did vnnto vs. 9. And he put no difference betweene vs and them, after that by faith he had purified their heartes. 10. Nowe therefore, why tempt ye God, to lay a yoke on the disciplers neckes, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare? 11. But we beleue, through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ to be saued, euens as they doe. 12. Then all the multitude kept silence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which told what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them. 13. And when they helde their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnnto me. 14. Simeon hath declared, howe God first did visite the Gentiles, to take of them a people vnnto his Name. 15. And to this agree the woordes of the Prophets, as it is written, 16. After this I will returne, and will build againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines thereof will I build againe, and I will set it vp. 17. That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles vpon whom my Name is called, saith the Lord which doeth all these things. 18. From the beginning of the worlde, God knoweth all his workes. 19. Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God, 20. But that we vnnto them, that they abstaine themselves from filthinesse of idoles, and fornication, and that that is strangled, and from blood. 21. For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie them that preache him, seeing he is read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath day. 22. Then it seemed good to the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to sende chosen men of their owne companie to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas: to wit, Iudas whose surname was Barsabas and Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren, 23. And wrote letters by them after this maner, THE APOSTLES, and the Elders, and the brethren, vnnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia, send greet- ing. 24. Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with wordes, and cumbred your mindes, saying, Ye must be circumcised and keepe the Lawe: to whom we gaue no such commandement, 25. It seemed therefore good to vs, when we were come together with one accord, to send chosen men vnnto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, 26. Men that haue giuen vp their lies for the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ. 27. We haue therefore sent Iudas and Silas, which shall also tell you ye same things by mouth. 28. For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay no more burden vpnto you, then these necessary things, 29. That is, that ye abstaine from things offered to idoles, and blood, and that that is strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your selues, ye shall doe well. Fare ye well. 30. Nowe when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after that they had assembled the multitude, they deli- ered the Epistle. 31. And when they had read it, they rejoiced for the con- solation. 32. And Iudas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren with many wordes, and strengthened them. 33. And after they had taried there a space, they were let goe in peace of the brethren vnnto the Apos- tles. 34. Notwithstanding Silas thought good to abide there still. 35. Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching and preaching with many other, the worde of the Lord. 36. But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and visite our brethren in euery citie, where we haue preached the worde of the Lord, and see how they doe. 37. And Barn- abas counselled to take with them Iohn, called Marke. 38. But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnnto their companie, which departed from
them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke. 39 Then were they so stirred, that they departed asunder one from the other, so that Barnabas tooke Marke, and sailed vnto Cyprus. 40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God. 41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, stablishing the Churches.

16
1 Then came he to Derbe and to Lystra: and beholde, a certaine discipke was there named Timotheus, a womans sonne, which was a Jewesse and beleued, but his father was a Grecian, 2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well. 3 Therefore Paul would that he should go forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of ye Jewes, which were in those quarters: for they knewe all, that his father was a Grecian. 4 And as they went through the cities, they deliered them the decrees to keepe, ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem. 5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and encreased in number daily.
6 Nowe when they had gone through out Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the worde in Asia. 7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not. 8 Therefore they passed through Mysia, and came downe to Troas, 9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs. 10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them. 11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis, 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in ye partes of Macedonia, and whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes. 13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, besides a Riuer, where they were wont to pray: and we sate downe, and spake vnto the women, which were come together. 14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended vnto the things, which Paul spake. 15 And when she was baptized, and her houshold, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue judged me to be faithfull to ye Lord, come into mine house, and abide there: and she constrained vs. 16 And it came to passe that as we went to prayer, a certaine maide hauing a spirit of diuination, mette vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining. 17 She followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shewe vnto you the way of salvation. 18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned about, and said to the spirit, I commaund thee in the Name of Jesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre. 19 Nowe when her masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the Magistrates, 20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Jewes, trouble our citie, 21 And preach ordainances, which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to observe, seeing we are Romanes. 22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commanded them to be beaten with roddes. 23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast them into prison, commaunding the layler to keepe them surely. 24 Who hauing receiued such commandement, cast them into the inner prison, and made their feete fast in the stocks. 25 Nowe
at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sung Psalms vnto God: and the prisoners heard them. 26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were loosed. 27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he saw the prison doores open, he drewe out his sword and would haue killed himselfe, supposing the prisoners had bin fled. 28 But Paul cryed with a loude voyece, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme: for we are all here. 29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas, 30 And brought them out, and said, Syrs, what must I doe to be saued? 31 And they saide, Beleeue in the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine houshold. 32 And they preached vnto him the worde of the Lord, and to all that were in the house. 33 Afterwarde he tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed their stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him, straighthway. 34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meate before them, and rejoyced that he with all his houshold beleued in God. 35 And when it was day, the governours sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe. 36 Then the keeper of the prison tolde these woordes vnto Paul, saying, The gouerness haue sent to loose you: nowe therefore get you hence, and goe in peace. 37 Then sayde Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncodemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and nowe would they put vs out priuily? Nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out. 38 And the sergeants tolde these woordes vnto the governours, who feared whe they heard that they were Romanes. 39 Then came they and praid them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie. 40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into the house of Lydia: and when they had seene the Lydia, they comforted them, and departed.

17

1 Nowe as they passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes. 2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath daies disputed with them by the Scriptures, 3 Opening, and alleaging that Christ must haue suffered, and risen againe from the dead: and this is Jesus Christ, whom, said he, I preach to you. 4 And some of them beleued, and ioyned in companie with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of thechiefe women not a fewe. 5 But the Iewes which beleued not, moued with enuiue, tooke vnto them certaine vagabonds and wicked fellowes, and whe they had assembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people. 6 But when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the citie, crying. These are they which haue subuered the state of the world, and here they are, 7 Whom Iason hath receiued, and these all doe against the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is another King, one Jesus. 8 Then they troubled the people, and the heads of the citie, when they heard these things. 9 Notwithstanding when they had receiued sufficient assurance of Iason and of the other, they let them goe. 10 And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into ye Synagogue of the Iewes. 11 These were also more noble men then they which were at Thessalonica, which
receiuued the woerde with all readiness, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so. 12 Therefore many of them beleueued, and of honest women, which were Grecians, and men not a fewe. 13 But when the Iews of Thessalonica knewe, that the woord of God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and mooued the people. 14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still. 15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they shoulde come to him at once, they departed. 16 Nowe while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirite was stirred in him, when hee sawe the citie subject to idolatrie. 17 Therefore he disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market daily with whomesouer he met. 18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoickes, disputed with him, and some sayde, What will this babler say? Others sayde, He seemeth to be a setter forth of straungue gods (because hee preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.) 19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May we not know, what this newe doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? 20 For thou bringest certaine strange thinges vnto our eares: we woulde knowe therefore, what these things meane. 21 For all the Athenians, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue them selues to nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare some newes. 22 Then Paul stode in the mids of Mars streete, and sayde, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things yee are too superstitious. 23 For as I passed by, and behelde your duties, I founde an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWNEN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worship, him shewe I vnto you. 24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is Lord of heau and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands, 25 Neither is worshipped with mens handes, as though he needed any thing, seeing hee giueth to all life and breath and all things, 26 And hath made of one blood all mankinde, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned the seasons which were ordaine before, and the boundes of their habitation, 27 That they shoule seeke the Lord, if so be they might haue groped after him, and founde him though doubtlesse he be not farre from euery one of vs. 28 For in him we liue, and mooue, and haue our being, as also certaine of your owne Poets haue sayd, for we are also his generation. 29 Forasmuch then, as we are the generation of God, we ought not to thinke that ye Godhead is like vnto gold, or siluer, or stone grauen by arte and the inuention of man. 30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but nowe hee admonisheth all men euery where to repent, 31 Because hee hath appoynted a day in the which he wil iudge the world in righteousnes, by that man whome hee hath appoynted, whereof he hath giuen an assurance to all men, in that hee hath raised him from the dead. 32 Now when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked, and other sayde, We will heare thee againe of this thing. 33 And so Paul departed from among them. 34 Howbeit certaine men clae vnto Paul, and beleueued: among whome was also Denys Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

1 After these thinges, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus, 2 And found a certaine Iewe named Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, and his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded
all Iewes to depart from Rome) and hee came vnto them. 3 And because hee was of the same crafte, he abode with them and wrought (for their crafte was to make tentes.) 4 And he disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath day, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians. 5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul, forced in spirit, testified to the Iewes that Jesus was the Christ. 6 And when they resisted and blasphemed, he shooke his raiment, and saide vnto them, Your blood be vpon your owne head: I am cleane: from henceforth will I goe vnto the Gentiles. 7 So he departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue. 8 And Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleueued in the Lord with all his housholde: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleueued and were baptized. 9 Then saide the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and holde not thy peace. 10 For I am with thee, and no man shall lay handes on thee to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie. 11 So he continued there a yeere and six moneths, and taught ye worde of God among them. 12 Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accorde against Paul, and brought him to the judgement seate, 13 Saying, This fellow persuadeth me to worship God otherwise then the Lawe appointeth. 14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio saide vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O ye Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you. 15 But if it bee a question of woordes, and names, and of your Lawe, looke yee to it your selues: for I will be no judge of those things. 16 And hee draue them from the judgement seate. 17 Then tooke al the Grecians Sothenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the judgement seate: but Gal-lio cared nothing for those things. 18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, hee tooke leaue of the brethren, and sailed into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vowe. 19 Then hee came to Ephesus, and left them there: but hee entred into the Synagogue and disputed with the Iewes. 20 Who desired him to tarie a longer time with them: but he would not consent, 21 But bade the farewel, saying, I must needes keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, if God will. So he sailed from Ephesus. 22 And when hee came downe to Cesarea, he went vp to Hierusalem: and when he had saluted the Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia. 23 Nowe when he had taried there a while, he departed, and went thorowe the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples. 24 And a certaine Iewe named Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mightie in the Scriptures. 25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and hee spake fervently in the Spirite, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knew but the baptism of Iohn onely. 26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly. 27 And when hee was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receive him: and after hee was come thither, he holpe them much which had beleueed through grace. 28 For mightily hee confuted publibly the Iewes, with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scriptures, that Jesus was that Christ.

19

1 And it came to passe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed thorow the vpper coasts,
came to Ephesus, and found certaine disciples, 2 And saide vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleued? And they saide vnto him, Wee haue not so much as heard whether there be an holy Ghost. 3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? And they saide, Vnto Iohns baptism. 4 Then saide Paul, Iohn verely baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they shoulde beleue in him, which should come after him, that is, in Christ Iesus. 5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus. 6 So Paul layde his handes vpon them, and the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake the tongues, and prophecied. 7 And all the men were about twelue. 8 Moreouer he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and exhorting to the things that appertaine to the kingdom of God. 9 But when certaine were hardened, and disobeyed, speaking euill of the way of God before the multitude, hee departed from them, and separated the disciples, and disputed daaily in the schoole of one Tyrannus. 10 And this was done by the space of two yeeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of ye Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Grecians. 11 And God wrought no small miracles by the handes of Paul, 12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke, kerches or handkerches, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them. 13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcistes, tooke in hand to name ouer them which had euil spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adore you by Iesus, whom Paul preacheth. 14 (And there were certaine sonnes of Sceua a Iewe, the Priest, about seuen which did this) 15 And the euil spirit answered, and said, Iesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye? 16 And the man in whome the euil spirit was, ranne on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fledde out of that house, naked, and wounded. 17 And this was known to all the Iewes and Grecians also, which dwelt at Ephesus, and feare came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified, 18 And many that beleued, came and confessed, and shewed their workes. 19 Many also of them which vsed cuurious artes, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of siluer. 20 So the worde of God grew mightily, and preuailed. 21 Nowe when these things were accomplished, Paul purposed by the Spirite to passe through Macedonia and Achaia, and to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue bene there, I must also see Rome. 22 So sent he into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he remained in Asia for a season. 23 And the same time there arose no small trouble about that way. 24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a siluersmith, which made siluer temples of Diana, brought great gains vnto the craftesmen, 25 Whom he called together, with the worke-men of like things, and saide, Syrs, ye knowe that by this craft we haue our goods: 26 Moreouer ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia this Paul hath perswaded, and turned away much people, saying, That they be not gods which are made with handes. 27 So that not onely this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portion shall be reproued, but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteemed, and that it would come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia and the world worshipeth, should be destroyed. 28 Now when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians. 29 And the whole citie was full of confusion, and they rushed into the common place
with one assent, and caught Gaius, and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his iourney. 
30 And when Paul would have entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not. 31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that hee woulde not present him selfe in the Common place. 32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assemblie was out of order, and the more part knewe not wherefore they were come together. 33 And some of the company drew forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwards. Alexander then beckened with the hande, and woulde haue excused the matter to the people. 34 But when they knew that he was a Iewe, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres, of all men crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians. 35 Then the towne clearke when hee had stayed the people, saide, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not howe that the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the image, which came downe from Jupiter? 36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, ye ought to be appeased, and to doe nothing rashly. 37 For yee haue brought hither these men, which haue neither committed sacrilege, neither doe blaspheme your goddesse. 38 Wherefore, if Demetrius and the craftes men which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the lawe is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another. 39 But if ye inquire any thing cocerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawful assembly. 40 For we are euin in iepardie to be accused of this dayes sedition, for as much as there is no cause, whereby we may giue a reason of this con- course of people. 41 And when he had thus spoken, hee let the assembly depart.

20
Nowe after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to goe into Macedonia. 2 And when hee had gone through those parts, and had exhalted them with many words, he came into Grecia. 3 And having taried there three moneths, because the Iewes layde waite for him, as hee was about to saile into Syria, hee purposd to returne through Macedonia. 4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thesalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus. 5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas. 6 And we sailed forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes. 7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued the preaching vnto midnight. 8 And there were many lightes in an upper chamber, where they were gathered together. 9 And there sate in a windowe a certaine yong man, named Eutychus, fallen into a dead sleepe: and as Paul was long preaching, hee overcame with sleepe, fell downe from the thirde loft, and was taken vp dead. 10 But Paul went downe, and layde himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him. 11 Then when Paul was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, haung spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, hee so departed. 12 And they brought the boye aliuie, and they were not a little comforted. 13 Then we went before to shipp, and sailed vnto the citie Assos, that wee might receive Paul there: for so had hee appointed, and would himselfe goe afoote. 14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Assos, and we had re-
ceived him, we came to Mitylenes. 15 And wee sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: the next day we came to Miletum. 16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because hee woulde not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, if hee could possible, at Hierusalem, at the day of Pentecost. 17 Wherefore from Miletum, hee sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church. 18 Who when they were come to him, hee said vnto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue bene with you at all seasons, 19 Seruing the Lord with all modestie, and with many teares, and tentations, which came vnto me by the layings awaite of the Iewes, 20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed you, and taught you openly and through-out every house, 21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and to the Grecians the repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ. 22 And nowe beholde, I goe bound in the Spirit vnto Hierusalem, and know not what things shall come vnto me there, 23 Saue that ye holy Ghost witnesseth in every citie, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me. 24 But I passe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto my selue, so that I may fulfill my course with ioye, and the ministration which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God. 25 And nowe behold, I know that henceforth ye all, through whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more. 26 Wherefore I take you to recorde this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. 27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed you all the counsell of God. 28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you Overseers, to feede the Church of God, which hee hath purchased with that his owne blood. 29 For I knowe this, that after my departing shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke. 30 Moreouer of your owne selues shall men arise speaking peruerse thinges, to drawe disciples after them. 31 Therefore watche, and remember, that by the space of three yeres I ceased not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares. 32 And nowe brethren, I commend you to God, and to the worde of his grace, which is able to build further, and to giue you an inheritance, among all them, which are sanctified. 33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell. 34 Yea, ye knowe, that these handes haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me. 35 I haue shewed you all things, howe that so labouring, ye ought to support the weake, and to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus, howe that he saide, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue. 36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all. 37 Then they wept all abundantly, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him. 38 Being chiefly sorie for the words which he spake, That they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the shippes.

21

1 And as we launched forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, and the day following vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara. 2 And we found a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboord, and set forth. 3 And whe we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the ship vn-laded ye burden. 4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seuen dayes. And they told Paul through the Spirit, that he should
not goe vp to Hierusalem. 5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed and went our way, and they all accompanied vs with their wiues and children, euin out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shore, prayed. 6 Then when we had embraced one another, we tooke ship, and they returned home. 7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day. 8 And the next day, Paul and we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of Philippe the Evangelist, which was one of the seuen Deacons, and abode with him. 9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which did prophecie. 10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus. 11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and sayd, Thus sayth the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles. 12 And when we had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he would not go vp to Hierusalem. 13 Then Paul answered, and sayd, What doe ye weeping and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus. 14 So when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done. 15 And after those dayes we trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem. 16 There went with vs also certaine of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whom we should lodged. 17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly. 18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were there assembled. 19 And when he had embraced them, hee tolde by order all things, that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration. 20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and sayd vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousand Iewes there are which beleue, and they are all zealous of the Law: 21 Now they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes, which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, and sayest that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to liue after the customes. 22 What is then to be done? the multitude must needs come together: for they shall heare that thou art come. 23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee. We haue foure men, which haue made a vowe, 24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may shaue their heads: and all shall knowe, that those things, whereof they haue bene in-formed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the Lawe. 25 For as touching ye Gentiles, which beleue, we haue written, and determined that they obserue no such thing, but that they keepe themselves from things offred to idoles, and from blood, and from that that is strangled, and from fornication. 26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day was purifed with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntill that an offering should be offered for euery one of them. 27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia (when they sawe him in the Temple) moued all the people, and laide hands on him, 28 Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and the Lawe, and this place: moreover, he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place. 29 For they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian with him in
the citie, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple. 30 Then all the citie was mowed, and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul and drewe him out of the Temple, and forth with the doores were shut. 31 But as they went about to kill him, tydings came vnto the chiefe capitaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was on an yproare. 32 Who immediately tooke souldiers and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they sawe the chiefe Captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul. 33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neere and tooke him, and commanded him to be bound with two chaine, and demanded who he was, and what he had done. 34 And one cryed this, another that, among the people. So when he could not know the certeintie for the tumult, he commanded him to be led into the castell. 35 And when hee came vnto the greekes, it was so that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people. 36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him. 37 And as Paul should haue bene led into the castell, he sayd vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who sayd, Canst thou speake Greeke? 38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raised a sedition, and led out into the wildernesse foure thousande men that were murtherers? 39 Then Paul sayde, Doubtlesse, I am a man which am a Iewe, and citizen of Tar- sus, a famous citie of Cilicia, and I beseech thee, suffer mee to speake vnto the people. 40 And when he had given him licence, Paul stooed on the greeces, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great silence, hee spake vnto them in the Hebrewe tongue, saying,

22

1 Ye men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence nowe towards you. 2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrewe tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and he sayd) 3 I am verely a man, which am a Iew, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect maner of the Lawe of the Fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day. 4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deliueringe into prison both men and women. 5 As also ye chiefe Priest doeth beare me witnes, and al the company of the Elders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, that they might be punished. 6 And so it was, as I journeyed and was come neere vnto Damascus about noone, that suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me. 7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou mee? 8 Then I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest. 9 Moreouer they that were with me, sawe in deede a light and were afraide: but they heard not the voyce of him that spake vnto me. 10 Then I sayd, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord sayde vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus: and there it shall be tolde thee of all things, which are appointed for thee to doe. 11 So when I could not see for the glory of that light, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, and came into Damascus. 12 And one Ananias a godly man, as pereining to the Lawe, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there, 13 Came vnto me, and stooed, and sayd vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked vpone him. 14 And he sayd, The God of our fathers hath appointed thee, that thou shouldest knowe his wil, and shouldest see that lust one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth. 15 For thou shalt be his witnes
Acts 22:16

Now therefore why tarest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, in calling on the Name of the Lord. And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a traunce, And saw him saying vnto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receive thy witnesses concerning me. Then I sayd, Lord, they know that I prisoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleued in thee. And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stood by, and consented vnto his death, and kept the clothes of them that slew him. Then he sayd vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles. And they heard him vnto this worde, but then they lift vp their voyces, and sayd, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not meete that he should liue. And as they cried and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the aire, The chiefe capitaine commanded him to be led into the castle, and bade that he should be scourged, and examined, that he might knowe wherefore they cryed so on him. And as they bound him with thongs, Paul sayd vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge one that is a Romane, and not condemned? Nowe when the Centurion heard it, hee went, and tolde the chiefe capitaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Romane. Then the chiefe capitaine came, and sayd to him, Tel me, art thou a Romane? And he said, Yea. And the chiefe capitaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedom. Then Paul sayd, But I was so borne. Then straightway they departed from him, which should haue examined him: and the chiefe capitaine also was afraied, after he knewe that hee was a Romane, and that he had bound him. On the next day, because hee would haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the hie Priests and all their Councill to come together: and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

23

1 And Paul behelde earnestly the Councill, and sayde, Men and brethren, I haue in all good conscience serued God vntill this day. Then the hie Priest Ananias commanded them that stood by, to smite him on the mouth. Then sayd Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to judge me according to the Lawe, and transgressing the Lawe, commaundest thou me to be smitten? And they that stood by, sayd, Reuilest thou Gods hie Priest? Then sayd Paul, I knewe not, brethren, that he was the hie Priest: for it is written, Thou shalt not speake euill of the ruler of thy people. But when Paul perceived that the one part were of the Sadduces, and the other of the Pharises, hee cried in the Council, Men and brethren, I am a Pharise, the sonne of a Pharise: I am accused of the hope and resurrection of the dead. And when hee had saide this, there was a dissension betweene the Pharises and the Sadduces, so that the multitude was deuided. For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharises confesse both. Then there was a great crye: and the Scribes of the Pharises part rose vp, and stroue, saying, We finde none euill in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God. And when there was a great dissension, the chiefe capitaine, fearing lest Paul should haue bene pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to go downe, and take him from among them, and to bring him into the castel. Nowe the night folowing,
the Lord stooed by him, and saide, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou hast testified of mee in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome. 12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an assemblie, and bounde themselues with a curse, saying, that they woulde neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul. 13 And they were more then fourtie, which had made this conspiracie. 14 And they came to the chiefe Priestes and Elders, and said, We haue bound our selues with a solemn curse, that wee will eate nothing, vntill we haue slaine Paul. 15 Nowe therefore, ye and the Council signifie to the chiefe capitaine, that hee bring him forth vnto you to morow: as though you would know some thing more perfectly of him, and we, or euer he come neere, will be readie to kill him. 16 But when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying awaite, he went, and entred into the castel, and tolde Paul. 17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and said, Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe capitaine: for he hath a certaine thing to shewe him. 18 So hee tooke him, and brought him to the chiefe capitaine, and saide, Paul the prisoner called mee vnto him, and prayed mee to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath some thing to say vnto thee. 19 Then the chiefe capitaine tooke him by the hande, and went apart with him alone, and asked him, What hast thou to shewe me? 20 And he saide, The Iewes have conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morow into the Council, as though they would inquire somewhat of him more perfectly: 21 But let them not perswade thee: for there lie in waite for him of them, more then fourtie men, which haue bound themselues with a curse, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and nowe are they readie, and waite for thy promise. 22 The chiefe capitaine then let the yong man depart, after hee had charged him to vttre it to no man, that he had shewed him these things. 23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make readie two hundred souldiers, that they may go to Cæsarea, and horsemen three score and ten, and two hundred with darters, at the thirde houre of the night. 24 And let them make readie an horse, that Paul being set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour. 25 And he wrote an epistle in this maner: 26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouernour Felix sendeth greeting. 27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, and rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane. 28 And when I would haue knowen the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Council. 29 There I perceiued that hee was accused of questions of their Lawe, but had no crime worthy of death, or of bondes. 30 And when it was shewed me, how that the Iewes layd waite for the man, I sent him straightway to thee, and commanded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him. Farewell. 31 Then the souldiers as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris. 32 And the next day, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned vnto the Castel. 33 Now when they came to Cæsarea, they deliuered the epistle to the Gouernour, and presented Paul also vnto him. 34 So when the Gouernour had read it, hee asked of what prouince he was: and when he vnderstoode that he was of Cilicia, 35 I will heare thee, said he, when thine accusers also are come, and commanded him to bee kept in Herods iudgement hall.

24

1 Now after fiue dayes, Ananias the hie Priest came downe with the
Elders, and with Tertullus a certayne orator, which appeared before the Gouernour against Paul. 2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnesse through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation through thy prudence, 3 We acknowledge it wholly, and in all places most noble Felix, with all thanks, 4 But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courtesie a fewe wordeis. 5 Certainely we haue found this man a pestilenc fellowe, and a mooerer of sedition among all the lewes throughout the world, and a chiefe maintainer of the secte of the Nazarites: 6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therefore wee tooke him, and woulde haue judged him according to our Lawe: 7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our handes, 8 Commanding his accusers to come to thee: of whom thou mayest (if thou wilt inquire) know all these things whereof we accuse him. 9 And the lewes likewise affirmed, saying that it was so. 10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beckened vnto him that hee shoulde speake, answered, I do the more gladly answere for my selfe, for as much as I knowe that thou hast bene of many yeeres a judge vnto this nation, 11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem. 12 And they neither found mee in the Temple disputing with any man, neither making vproare among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie. 13 Neither can they proove the things, whereof they now accuse me. 14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleuing all things which are written in the Lawe and the Prophets, 15 And haue hope towerdes God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust. 16 And herein I endeavour my selfe to haue alway a cleare conscience towarde God, and toward men. 17 Now after many yeres, I came and brought almes to my nation and offerings. 18 At what time, certaine lewes of Asia founde mee purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. 19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against me. 20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue found any vniust thing in mee, while I stoode in the Council, 21 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day. 22 Nowe when Felix heard these things, he deferred them, and said, When I shall more perfectly know the things which concerne this way, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I will decise your matter. 23 Then hee commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he should haue ease, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him. 24 And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a lewesse, and he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ. 25 And as he disputed of righteousnes and temperance, and of the judgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, and when I haue convenient time, I will call for thee. 26 Hee hoped also that money shoulde haue bene giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore hee sent for him the oftner, and communed with him. 27 When two yeeres were expired, Porcius Festus came into Felix roume: and Felix willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

25

1 When Festus was then come into the province, after three dayes he went vp from Caesarea vnto
Hierusalem. 2 Then the high Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him, 3 And desired fauour against him, that hee would send for him to Hierusalem: and they l ery waite to kill him by the way. 4 But Festus answered, that Paul should bee kept at Caesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart thither. 5 Let them therefore, saide he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednes in the man, let them accuse him. 6 Now when he had taried among them no more then ten dayes, hee went downe to Caesarea, and the next day sate in the judg ment seat, and commanded Paul to be brought. 7 And when hee was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stooede about him and l eyd many and grievous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine profe, 8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing against the lawe of the Iewes, neither against ye temple, nor against Caesar. 9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul and saide, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before mee? 10 Then said Paul, I stand at Caesars judgment seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest. 11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthie of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse me, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Caesar. 12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Council, hee answered, Hast thou appeale vnto Caesar? vnto Caesar shalt thou goe. 13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Caesarea to salute Festus. 14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix, 15 Of whom when I came to Hierusalem, the high Priestes and Elders of the Iewes informed me, and desired to haue judgement against him. 16 To whome I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that hee which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defend himselfe, concerning the crime. 17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the judgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth. 18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed: 19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alieue. 20 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things. 21 But because he appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I mght send him to Cesar. 22 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morowe, sayd he, thou shalt heare him. 23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and were entred into the Common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth. 24 And Festus sayd, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that he ought not to liue any longer. 25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of death, that he hath committed: neuertheles, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him. 26 Of whome I haue no certaine thing to
write vnto my Lord: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write. 27 For me thinketh it vreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shewe the causes which are layde against him.

26

1 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe. 2 I thinke my selfe happy, King Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes. 3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of all customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee, to heare me patiently. 4 As touching my life from my childhood, and what it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes, 5 Which knewe me heretofore, even from my elders (if they would testifie) that after the most straite sect of our religion I liued a Pharise. 6 And now I stand and am accused for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers. 7 Whereunto our twelve tribes instantly seruing God day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes. 8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God should raise againe the dead? 9 I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought to doe many contrarie things against the Name of Iesus of Nazareth. 10 Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: for many of the Saints I shut vp in prison, haung receiued authoritie of the hie Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue my sentence. 11 And I punished them throughout all the Synagogues, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being more mad against them, I persecuted them, euen vnto strange cities. 12 At which time, euen as I went to Damascus with authoritie, and commission from the hie Priests, 13 At midday, O King, I sawe in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightnes of the sunne, shine round about mee, and them which went with me. 14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce speaking vnto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kicke against pricks. 15 Then I sayd, Who art thou, Lord? And he sayd, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest. 16 But rise and stand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witnesse, both of the things which thou hast seene, and of the things in the which I will appeare vnto thee, 17 Deliueringe thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee, 18 To open their eyes, that they may turne from darknes to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiuie forgiuenes of sinnes, and inheritance among them, which are sanctified by fayth in me. 19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision, 20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascvs, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turne to God, and doe workes worthy amendment of life. 21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the Temple, and went about to kill me. 22 Neuertheles, I obtained helpe of God, and continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to great, saying none other things, then those which the Prophets and Moses did saye should come. 23 To wit, that Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto this people, and to the Gentiles. 24 And as he thus answered for himselfe, Festus said with a loude voyce, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much learning
doeth make thee mad. 25 But he said, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I speak the wordes of truth and sobernes. 26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I am perswaded that none of these things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner. 27 O King Agrippa, beleuest thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleuest. 28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to become a Christian. 29 Then Paul sayd, I would to God that not onely thou, but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds. 30 And when he had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them. 31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, nor of bonds. 32 Then sayd Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue bene loosed, if hee had not appealed vnto Cesar.

27

1 Now when it was concluded, that we should sayle into Italie, they deliuered both Paul, and certaine other prisoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of Augustus. 2 And we entred into a ship of Adramyttium purposing to saile by the coastes of Asia, and launched foorth, and had Aristarchus of Macedon, a Thessalonian, with vs. 3 And the next day we arrived at Sidon: and Iulius courteously entreated Paul, and gaue him libertie to go vnto his friends, that they might refresh him. 4 And from thence we launched, and sayled hard by Cyprus, because ye windes were contrarie. 5 Then sayled we ouer the sea by Cilicia, and Pamphilia, and came to Myra, a citie in Lycia. 6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sayling into Italie, and put vs therein. 7 And when we had sayled slowly many dayes, and scarce were come against Gnidum, because the winde suffered vs not, we sailed hard by Candie, neere to Salmone, 8 And with much adoe sayled beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie Lasae. 9 So when much time was spent, and sayling was now jeapardous, because also the Fast was nowe passed, Paul exhorted them, 10 And sayde vnto them, Syrs, I see that this voyaige will be with hurt and much damage, not of the lading and ship onely, but also of our liues. 11 Neuertheles the Centurion beleued rather the gouernour and the master of the ship, then those things which were spoken of Paul. 12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counsell to depart thence, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenie, there to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lyeth toward the Southwest and by West, and Northwest and by West. 13 And when the Southerne winde blew softly, they supposing to atteine their purpose, loosed neerer, and sailed by Candie. 14 But anon after, there arose by it a stormy winde called Euroclydon. 15 And when the ship was caught, and could not resist the winde, we let her goe, and were caried away. 16 And we ran vnder a little Yle named Clauda, and had much a doe to get the boat. 17 Which they tooke vp and vsed all helpe, vndergirding the ship, fearing least they should haue fallen into Syrtes, and they strake saile, and so were caried. 18 The next day when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lightened the ship. 19 And the third day we cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the ship. 20 And when neither sunne nor starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that we should be saued, was then taken away. 21 But after long abstince, Paul stood forth in the mids of them, and said, Syrs,
Acts 27:22

ye should have hearkened to me, and not have loosed from Candie: so should ye have gained this hurt and losse. 22 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there shalbe no losse of any mans life among you, saue of the ship onely. 23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue, 24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou must be brought before Cesar: and lo, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that sayle with thee. 25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good courage: for I beleue God, that it shall be so as it hath bene tolde me. 26 Howbeit, we must be cast into a certaine Iland. 27 And when ye fourteenth night was come, as we were caried to and from in the Adriaticall sea about midnight, the shipmen deemed that some countrey approched vnsto them. 28 And sounded, and found it twentie fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found fiftenee fathoms. 29 Then fearing least they should have fallen into some rough places, they cast fourr ancrees out of the sterne, and wished that the day were come. 30 Nowe as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, and had let downe the boat into the sea vnder a colour as though they would have cast ankers out of the foreship, 31 Paul sayde vnto the Centurion and the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye can not be safe. 32 Then the souldiers cutt off the ropes of the boat, and let it fall away. 33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing: 34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safegarde: for there shall not an heare fall from the head of any of you. 35 And when he had thus spoken, hee tooke bread and gaue thankes to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate. 36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate. 37 Nowe we were in the ship in all two hundredth three score and sixtene soules. 38 And whe they had eaten ynough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea. 39 And when it was day, they knewe not the countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship. 40 So when they had taken vp the ankers, they committed the ship vnsto the sea, and losed the rudder bonds, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and drewe to the shore. 41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the ship: and the forepart stucke fast, and could not be moued, but the hinderpart was broken with the violence of the waues. 42 Then the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, least any of them, when he had swimme out, should flee away. 43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, stayed them from this counsell, and commanded that they that couldle swimme, shoulde cast them selues first into the sea, and goe out to land: 44 And the other, some on boardes, and some on certaine pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

28

1 And when they were come safe, then they knewe that the Yle was called Melita. 2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of the present showre, and because of the colde. 3 And when Paul had gathered a number of stickes, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and leapt on his hand. 4 Nowe when ye Barbarians saw the worme hang on his hand, they said among themselves, This man surely is a murderer, whom, though he hath escape the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to liue. 5 But he shooke off the worme into the fire, and felt
no harme. 6 Howbeit they wayted whe he should haue swolne, or fallen
downe dead suddenly: but after they
had looked a great while, and sawe
no inconuenience come to him, they
changed their mindes, and said, That
he was a God. 7 In the same quarters,
the chiefe man of the Yle (whose
name was Publius) had possessions:
the same receiued vs, and lodged vs
three dayes courteously. 8 And so
it was, that the father of Publius lay
sicke of the feauer, and of a bloodie
flixe: to whom Paul entred in, and
when he prayed, he laide his hands
on him, and healed him. 9 When
this then was done, other also in the
Yle, which had diseases, came to him,
and were healed, 10 Which also did
vs great honour: and when we de-
parted, they laded vs with things ne-
cessarie. 11 Nowe after three moneths
we departed in a shipp of Alexand-
dria, which had wintred in the Yle,
whose badge was Castor and Pollux.
12 And when we arrived at Syracuse,
we taried there three dayes. 13 And
from thence we set a compass, and
came to Rheatium: and after one day,
the South wind blew, and we came
the seconde day to Putioli: 14 Where
we found brethren, and were desired
to tary with them seuen dayes, and so
we went toward Rome. 15 And from
thence, when the brethren heard of
vs, they came to meete vs at the
Market of Appius, and at the Three
taurnes, whom when Paul sawe, he
thanked God, and waxed bolde. 16 So
when we came to Rome, the Centu-
rion deliuered the prisoners to the
generall Captaine: but Paul was suf-
ered to dwell by him selfe with a
soldier that kept him. 17 And the
third day after, Paul called the chiefe
of the Iewes together: and when they
were come, he said vnto them, Men
and brethren, though I haue com-
mitted nothing against the people, or
Lawes of the fathers, yet was I deli-
uered prisoner from Hierusalem into
the handes of the Romanes. 18 Who
when they had examined me, would
haue let me goe, because there was no
cause of death in me. 19 But when
the Iewes spake contrary, I was con-
strained to appeale vnto Cesar, not
because I had ought to accuse my
nation of. 20 For this cause therefore
haue I called for you, to see you, and
to speake with you: for that hope
of Israels sake, I am bound with this
chaine. 21 Then they saide vnto him,
We neither receiued letters out of
Iudea concerning thee, neither came
any of the brethren that shewed or
spake any euill of thee. 22 But we
will heare of thee what thou thinkest:
for as concerning this sect, we knowe
that every where it is spoken against.
23 And when they had appointed him
day, there came many vnto him into
his lodging, to whom he expounded
testifying the kingdom of God, and
persuading them those things that
concerne Iesus, both out of the Lawe
of Moses, and out of the Prophets,
from morning to night. 24 And some
were persuaded with ye things which
were spoken, and some beleuued not.
25 Therefore when they agreed not
among themselues, they departed, af-
fter that Paul had spoken one word,
to wit, Well spake the holy Ghost by
Esaies the Prophet vnto our fathers,
26 Saying, Goe vnto this people, and
say, By hearing ye shall heare, and
shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye
shall see, and not perceiue. 27 For
the heart of this people is waxed fatte,
and their eares are dull of hear-
ing, and with their eyes haue they
winked, least they shoulde see with
their eyes, and heare with their eares,
and vnderstand with their heartes,
and should returne that I might heale
them. 28 Be it known therefore vnto
you, that this salvation of God is sent
to the Gentiles, and they shall heare
it. 29 And when he had saide these
things, the Iewes departed, and had
great reasoning among themselues.
30 And Paul remained two yeeres full
in an house hired for himselfe, and
receiued all that came in vnto him,
31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all boldness of speech, without let.


THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE ROMANS

1 Paul a seruant of Iesus Christ called to be an Apostle, put apart to preache the Gospel of God, 
2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophetes in the holy Scriptures) 
3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seede of Dauid according to the flesh, 
4 And declared mightily to be the Sonne of God, touching the Spirit of sanctification by the resurrection from the dead) 
5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apostleship (that obedience might be giuen vnto ye faith) for his Name among al ye Gentiles, 
6 Among whom ye be also the called of Iesus Christ: 
7 To all you that be at Rome beloued of God, called to be Saints: 
8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throughout the whole world. 
9 For God is my winnesse (whom I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you 
10 Alwayes in my prayers, beseeching that by some meanes, one time or other I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will of God, to come vnto you. 
11 For I long to see you, that I might bestowe among you some spirituall gift, that you might be strengthened: 
12 That is, that I might be comforted together with you, through our mutuall faith, both yours and mine. 
13 Now my brethren, I would that ye should not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue some fruite also among you, as I haue among the other Gentiles. 
14 I am better both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise men and vnto the vnwise. 
15 Therefore, as much as in me is, I am readie to preache ye Gospel to you also that are at Rome. 
16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation to every one that beleueth, to the Iewe first, and also to the Grecian. 
17 For by it the righteousnesse of God is reueiled from faith to faith: as it is written, The iust shall liue by faith. 
18 For the wrath of God is reueiled from heauen against all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of men, which withhold the trueth in vnrighteousnesse. 
19 Forasmuch as that, which may be knowe of God, is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it vnto them. 
20 For the inuisible things of him, that is, his eternal power and Godhead, are seene by ye creation of the worlde, being considered in his workes, to the intent that they should be without excuse: 
21 Because that when they knewe God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their thoughtes, and their foolish heart was full of darkenesse. 
22 When they professed themselues to be wise, they became fooles. 
23 For they turned the glorie of the incorruptible God to the similitude of the image of a corruptible man, and of birds, and foure footed beastes, and of creeping things. 
24 Wherefore also God gaue them vp to their hearts lusts, vnto vniclannesse, to defile their owne bodies betwene themselves: 
25 Which turned the trueth of God vnto a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature, forsaking the Creator, which is blessed for euer, Amen. 
26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature. 
27 And likewise also the men left the naturall vse of the woman, and burned in their lust one toward another, and man with man
wrought filthinesse, and receiued in themselues such recompence of their errour, as was meete. 28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, euen so God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate minde, to doe those things which are not conuenient, 29 Being full of all vnrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuie, of murder, of debate, of deceit, taking all things in the euill part, whisperers, 30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proude, boasters, inuenters of euil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without naturall affection, such as can neuer be appeased, mercilesse. 31 Which men, though they knew ye Lawe of God, how that they which comit such things are worthie of death, yet not onely do the same, but also fauour them that doe them.

2 1 Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that condemnest: for in that that thou condemnest another, thou condemnest thy selfe: for thou that condemnest, doest the same things. 2 But we know that the judgement of God is according to trueth, against them which comit such things. 3 And thinkest thou this, O thou man, that condemnest them which doe such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God? 4 Or desipest thou the riches of his bountifullnesse, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifullnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance? 5 But thou, after thine hardnesse, and heart that canot repent, heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, and of the declaration of the iust judgement of God, 6 Who wil reward euery man according to his workes: 7 That is, to them which through patience in well doing, seeke glorie, and honour, and

immortalitie, everlasting life: 8 But vnto them that are contentious and disobey the trueth, and obey vnrighteousnesse, shalbe indignation and wrath. 9 Tribulation and anguish shalbe vpon the soule of euery man that doeth euill: of the Iewe first, and also of the Grecian. 10 But to euery man that doeth good, shalbe glory, and honour, and peace: to the Iew first, and also to the Grecian. 11 For there is no respect of persons with God. 12 For as many as haue sinned without the Lawe, shall perish also without the Lawe: and as many as haue sinned in the Lawe, shall be iudged by the Lawe, 13 (For the hearers of the Lawe are not righteous before God: but the doers of the Lawe shalbe justified. 14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Lawe, doe by nature, the things contenied in the Lawe, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Lawe vnto themselues, 15 Which shew the effect of the Lawe written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnes, and their thoughts accusing one another, or excusing,) 16 At the day when God shall iudge the secretes of men by Jesus Christ, according to my Gospel. 17 Beholde, thou art called a lewe, and restest in the Lawe, and gloriest in God, 18 And knowest his will, and triest the things that dissent from it, in that thou art instructed by the Lawe: 19 And persuadest thy selfe that thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which are in darkenesse, 20 An instructor of them which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearned, which hast the forme of knowledge, and of the truth in ye Law. 21 Thou therefore, which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest, A man should not steale, doest thou steale? 22 Thou that saist, A man should not commit adulterie, doest thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorrest idoles, committest thou sacrilege? 23 Thou that gloriest in the Lawe, through breaking the Lawe, dishonourest thou
Romans 2:24

God? 24 For ye Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written. 25 For circumcision verely is profitable, if thou do the Lawe: but if thou be a transgressour of the Lawe, thy circumcision is made vn circumcision. 26 Therefore if the vn circumcision keepe the ordinances of the Lawe, shall not his vn circumcision be counted for circumcision? 27 And shall not vn circumcision which is by nature (if it keepe the Lawe) condemne thee which by the letter and circumcision art a transgressour of the Lawe? 28 For hee is not a Jewe, which is one outwarde: neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: 29 But he is a Jewe which is one within, and the circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

3

1 What is then the preferment of the Jewe? or what is the profite of circumcision? 2 Much euery maner of way: for chiefly, because vnto them were of credite committed the oracles of God. 3 For what, though some did not beleue? shall their vnbelieue make the faith of God without effect? 4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and euery man a lyar, as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy words, and over come, when thou art judged. 5 Now if our vnrighteousnes comend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God vnrighteous which punisheth? (I speake as a man.) 6 God forbid: els how shall God iudge ye world? 7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded through my lye vnto his glorie, why am I yet condemned as a sinner? 8 And (as we are blamed, and as some affirme, that we say) why doe we not euil, that good may come thereof? whose damnation is iust. 9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wise: for we haue alreadie prooued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne, 10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one. 11 There is none that vnder standeth: there is none that seeketh God. 12 They haue all gone out of the way: they haue bene made altogether vnprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no not one. 13 Their throte is an open sepulchre: they haue vsed their tongues to deceite: the poyson of aspes is vnder their lippes. 14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. 15 Their feete are swift to shedd blood. 16 Destruction and calamity are in their waies, 17 And ye way of peace they haue not known. 18 The feare of God is not before their eies. 19 Now we know that whatsoeuer ye Lawe saieth, it saieth it to them which are vnder ye Law, that euery mouth may bee stopped, and all the world be subject to the judgement of God. 20 Therefore by the woorkes of the Lawe shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the Lawe commeth the knowledge of sinne. 21 But nowe is the righteousness, of God made manifest without the Lawe, hauing witnesses of the Lawe and of the Prophets, 22 To wit, the righteousness of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleue. 23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are deprevied of the glorie of God, 24 And are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus, 25 Whom God hath set forth to be a reconciliation through faith in his blood to declare his righteousnes, by the forgiuenesse of the sinnes that are passed, 26 Through the patience of God, to shewe at this time his righteousnesse, that hee might be iust, and a justifier of him which is of the faith of Iesus. 27 Where is then the reioycing? It is excluded. By what Lawe? of woorkes? Nay: but by the Lawe of faith. 28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith, without the woorkes of the Lawe. 29 God, is he the God of the Iewes onely, and not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euens of the Gentiles also.
For it is one God, who shall justifie circumcision of faith, and vnccircumcision through faith. 

Doe we then make the Lawe of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Lawe.

4

What shall we say then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the flesh? For if Abraham were justified by workes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God. 

For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleuued God, and it was counted to him for righteousnesse. 

Nowe to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette: But to him that worketh not, but beleueth in him that justifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousnesse. 

Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without workes, saying, 

Blessed are they, whose iniquities are forgien, and whose sinnes are covered. 

Blessed is the man, to whom the Lord imputeth not sinne. 

Came this blessednesse then vpon the circumcision onely, or vpon the vnccircumcision also? For we say, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousnesse. 

Howe was it then imputed? when he was circumcised, or vnccircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vnccircumcised. 

After, he received the signe of circumcision, as the seale of the righteousnesse of ye faith which he had, when he was vnccircumcised, that he should be the father of all them that beleue, not being circumsic - ced, that righteousnesse might be imputed to them also, And the father of circumcision, not vnto them onely which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also that walke in the steppes of the faith of our father Abraham, which he had when he was vnccircumcised. 

For the promise that he should be the heire of the worlde, was not giuen to Abraham, or to his seede, through the Lawe, but through the righteousnesse of faith. 

For if they which are of the Lawe, be heires, faith is made voide, and the promise is made of none effect. 

For the Lawe causeth wrath: for where no Lawe is, there is no transgression. 

Therefore it is by faith, that it might come by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe: but also to that which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all, (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) euen before God whom he beleuued, who quickened the dead, and calleth those thinges which be not, as though they were. 

Which Abraham aboue hope, beleuued vnder hope, that he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken to him, So shall thy seede be. 

And he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne bodie, which was nowe dead, being almost an hundreth yeere olde, neither the deadnes of Saraies wombe. 

Neither did he doubt of the promise of God through vnbelieve, but was strengthened in the faith, and gaue glory to God, Being fully assured that he which had promised, was also able to doe it. 

And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. 

Nowe it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousnesse, But also for vs, to whom it shalbe imputed for righteousnesse, which beleue in him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead, 

Who was deliuered to death for our sinnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

5

Then being iustified by faith, we haue peace toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ. By who also through faith, we haue had this access into this grace, wherein we stand, and reioyce vnder ye hope of the glory of God. 

Neither that onely, but also we reioyce in tribulations,
knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience, 4 And patience experience, and experience hope, 5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our heartes by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs. 6 For Christ, when we were yet of no strength, at his time died for the vngodly. 7 Doubtles one will scarce die for a righteouse man: but yet for a good man it may be that one dare die. 8 But God setteth out his loue towards vs, seeing that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs. 9 Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shalbe saued from wrath through him. 10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we shalbe saued by his life, 11 And not onely so, but we also reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom we haue nowe receiued the atonement. 12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into ye world, and death by sinne, and so death went ouer all men: in who all men haue sinned. 13 For vnto the time of the Law was sinne in the worlde, but sinne is not imputed, while there is no lawe. 14 But death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like maner of that transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come. 15 But yet the gift is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many. 16 Neither is the gift so, as that which entred in by one that sinned: for the fault came of one offence vnto condemnation: but the gift is of many offences to justification. 17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receiue that abundance of grace, and of that gift of that righteousnesse, reigne in life through one, that is, Iesus Christ. 18 Likewise then as by the offence of one, the fault came on all men to condemnation, so by the justifying of one, the benefite abounded toward all men to the justification of life. 19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also be made righteous. 20 Moreover the Law entred thereupon that the offence shoulde abound: neuerthelesse, where sinne abounded, there grace abounded much more: 21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

6

1 What shall we say then? Shall we continue still in sinne, that grace may abounde? God forbid. 2 Howe shall we, that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein? 3 Knowe ye not, that all we which haue bene baptized into Iesus Christ, haue bene baptized into his death? 4 We are buried then with him by baptismse into his death, that like as Christ was rasse from the dead to the glorie of the Father, so we also should walke in newnesse of life. 5 For if we be planted with him to the similitude of his death, euen so shall we be to the similitude of his resurrection, 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroied, that henceforth we should not serue sinne. 7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne. 8 Wherefore, if we bee dead with Christ, we beleue that we shall liue also with him, 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him. 10 For in that hee died, hee died once to sinne but in that he liueth, he liueth to God. 11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye are dead to sin, but are alieue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord. 12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in ye lusts therof: 13 Neither giue ye your members, as weapons of
vrn righteousness unto sinne: but giue
your selues unto God, as they that are
alie from the dead, and giue your
members as weapons of righteousness
to God. 14 For sinne shall not
have dominion ouer you: for ye are
not vnder ye Lawe, but vnder grace.
15 What then? shall we sinne, because
we are not vnder the Law, but vnder
grace? God forbid. 16 Knowe ye not,
that to whomsoever ye giue your
selues as seruants to obey, his seruants
ye are to whom ye obeie, whether it
be of sinne unto death, or of obe-
dience unto righteousness? 17 But
God be thanked, that ye haue beene
the seruants of sinne, but yee haue
obeyed from the heart vnto the forme
of the doctrine, wherunto ye were
delivered. 18 Being then made free
from sinne, yee are made the seruants
of righteousness. 19 I speake after
the maner of man, because of the
infirmitie of your flesh: for as yee
haue giuen your members seruants
to uncleannes and to iniquitie, to
commit iniquitie, so now giue your
members seruants unto righteousness
in holinesse. 20 For when ye were
the seruants of sinne, ye were freed
from righteousness. 21 What fruit
had ye then in those things, whereof
ye are nowe ashamed? For the ende
of those things is death. 22 But now
being freed from sinne, and made
seruants unto God, ye haue your fruit
in holines, and the end, everlasting
life. 23 For the wages of sinne is death:
but the gift of God is eternall life,
through Iesus Christ our Lord.

7

1 Knowe yee not, brethren, (for I
speake to them that knowe the Lawe)
that the Lawe hath dominion ouer a
man as long as he liueth? 2 For the
woman which is in subiection to a
man, is bound by the Lawe to the
man, while he liueth: but if the man
bee dead, she is deliuered from the
lawe of the man. 3 So then, if while
the man liueth, she taketh another
man, she shalbe called an adulter-
esse: but if the man be dead, she
is free from the Lawe, so that shee is
not an adulteresse, though shee take
another man. 4 So yee, my brethren,
are dead also to the Lawe by ye body
of Christ, that ye should be vnto an
other, even vnto him that is raised vp
from the dead, that we should bring
forth fruite vnto God. 5 For when
we were in ye flesh, the affections
of sinnes, which were by the Law,
had force in our members, to bring
forth fruite vnto death. 6 But now
we are deliuered from the Lawe, he
being dead in whom we were holden,
that we should serue in newnesse of
Spirite, and not in the oldnesse of
the letter. 7 What shall we say then? Is
the Lawe sinne? God forbid. Nay,
yee knewe not sinne, but by the Lawe:
for I had not known lust, except
the Lawe had sayd, Thou shalt not
lust. 8 But sinne tooke an occasion by
eye commandement, and wrought in
me all maner of concupiscence: for
without the Lawe sinne is dead. 9 For
I once was alie, without the Lawe:
but when the commandement came,
sinne reuied, 10 But I died: and the
same commandement which was or-
dained vnto life, was found to be vnto
me vnto death. 11 For sinne tooke
occasion by the commandement, and
deceiued me, and thereby slewe me.
12 Wherefore the Lawe is holy, and
that commandement is holy, and lust,
and good. 13 Was that then which is
good, made death vnto me? God for-
bid: but sinne, that it might appeare
sinne, wrought death in me by that
which is good, that sinne might be out
of measure sinfull by the command-
ment. 14 For we knowe that the Law
is spirituall, but I am carnall, solde
vnder sinne. 15 For I alow not that
which I do: for what I would, that
do I not: but what I hate, that do I.
16 If I doe then that which I woulde
not, I consent to the Lawe, that it is
good. 17 Nowe then, it is no more I,
that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in
me. 18 For I know, that in me, that is,
in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to wil is preset with me: but I find no meanes to perform that which is good. 19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would, but the euil, which I would not, that do I. 20 Nowe if I do that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me. 21 I finde then that when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me. 22 For I delite in the Lawe of God, concerning the inner man: 23 But I see another Lawe in my members, rebelling against the Lawe of my minde, and leading me captiue vnto the lawe of sinne, which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliuer me from the body of this death! 25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. Then I my selfe in my minde serue the Lawe of God, but in my flesh the lawe of sinne.

8

1 Now then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 2 For the Lawe of the Spirite of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath freed mee from the lawe of sinne and of death. 3 For (that that was impossible to ye Lawe, in as much as it was weake, because of ye flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in ye similitude of sinful flesh, and for sinne, condened sinne in the flesh, 4 That that righteousnes of the Law might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after ye flesh, but after the Spirit. 5 For they that are after the flesh, sauour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. 6 For the wisedome of the flesh is death: but the wisedome of the Spirit is life and peace, 7 Because the wisedome of the flesh is enimie against God: for it is not subiect to the Lawe of God, neither in deede can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh, can not please God. 9 Now ye are not in the flesh, but in ye Spirit, because ye spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not ye Spirit of Christ, ye same is not his. 10 And if Christ bee in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirite is life for righteousnesse sake. 11 But if the Spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore brethren, wee are detters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh: 13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if yee mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall liue. 14 For as many as are ledde by the Spirit of God, they are the sonses of God. 15 For ye haue not receuied the Spirit of bodage, to feare againe: but ye haue receuied the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry Abba, Father. 16 The same Spirit beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the chil- dren of God. 17 If we be children, we are also heires, euens the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him. 18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time are not worthy of the glory, which shalbe shewed vnto vs. 19 For the feruent desire of the creature waiteth when the sonses of God shalbe reuieled, 20 Because the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne will, but by reason of him, which hath subdued it vnder hope, 21 Because the creature also shall be deliuered from the bondage of corrup- tion into the glorious libertie of the sonses of God. 22 For we knowe that every creature groveth with vs also, and travauileth in paine together vnto this present. 23 And not onely the creature, but we also which haue the first fruytes of the Spirit, euens doe sigh in our selues, waiting for the adoption, euens the redemption of our body. 24 For we are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for how can a man hope for that which he seeth? 25 But if we hope for that we see not, we doe with patience
abide for it. 26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we knowe not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh request for vs with sighs, which cannot be expressed. 27 But he that searcheth the heartes, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh request for ye Saints, according to the wil of God. 28 Also we knowe that all thinges worke together for the best vnto them that loue God, euен to them that are called of his purpose. 29 For those which hee knewe before, he also predestinate to bee made like to the image of his Sonne, that hee might be the first borne among many brethren. 30 Moreouer whom he pre-destinate, them also he called, and whom he called, them also he justified, and whom he justified, them he also glorified. 31 What shall we then say to these thinges? If God be on our side, who can be against vs? 32 Who spared not his owne Sonne, but gaued him for vs all to death, how shall he not with him giue vs all things also? 33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? it is God that justifieth. 34 Who shall condemn? it is Christ which is dead, yea, or rather, which is risen againe, who is also at the right hand of God, and maketh request also for vs. 35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword? 36 As it is written, For thy sake are we killed all day long: we are counted as sheepe for the slaughter. 37 Neuertheless, in all these thinges we are more then coquerours through him that loued vs. 38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor thinges present, nor thinges to come, 39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shalte able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

9

1 I say the trueth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience bearing mee witnes in the holy Ghost. 2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continually sorrow in mine heart. 3 For I woulde wish my selue to be separate from Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsemen according to the flesh, 4 Which are the Israelites, to whom perteineth the adoption, and the glory, and the Couenants, and the guing of the Lawe, and the seruice of God, and the promises. 5 Of whomse are the fathers, and of whomse concerning the flesh, Christ came, who is God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen. 6 Notwithstanding it can not bee that the worde of God should take none effect: for all they are not Israel, which are of Israel: 7 Neither are they all children, because they are the seede of Abraham: but, In Isaac shall thy seede be called: 8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are not the children of God: but the children of the promise, are counted for the seede. 9 For this is a worde of promise, In this same time wil I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne. 10 Neither he onely felt this, but also Rebecca when shee had conceiued by one, euen by our father Isaac. 11 For yer the children were borne, and when they had neither done good, nor euill (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election, not by workes, but by him that calleth) 12 It was said vnto her, The elder shall serue the yonger. 13 As it is written, I haue loued Iacob, and haue hated Esau. 14 What shall wee say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid. 15 For he saith to Moses, I wil haue mercy on him, to whom I wil shew mercie: and wil haue compassion on him, on who I wil haue copassion. 16 So then it is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercy. 17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might
shewe my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth. 18 Therefore he hath mercie on whome he will, and whom he will, he hardeneth. 19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will? 20 But, O man, who art thou which pleadest against God? shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? 21 Hath not the potter power of the clay to make of the same lumpe one vessell to honour, and another vnto dishonour? 22 What and if God would, to shewe his wrath, and to make his power known, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction? 23 And that hee might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercy, which hee hath prepared vnto glory? 24 Euen vs whom hee hath called, not of of the lewes onely, but also of the Gentiles, 25 As he sayth also in Osee, I will call them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued. 26 And it shalbe in the place where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my people, that there they shalbe called, The children of the liuing God. 27 Also Esaias cryeth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, yet shall but a remnant be saued. 28 For he wil make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnes: for the Lord will make a short count in the earth. 29 And as Esaias sayde before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha. 30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which folowed not righteousnes, haue attained vnto righteousnes, euen the righteousnes which is of faith. 31 But Israel which followed the Lawe of righteousnes, could not arteine vnto the Law of righteousnes. 32 Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the Lawe: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone, 33 As it is written, Beholde, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and every one that beleueth in him, shall not be ashamed.

10

1 Brethren, mine hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued. 2 For I beare them record, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge. 3 For they, being ignorant of the righteousnes of God, and going about to establish their owne righteousnes, haue not submitted themselves to the righteousnes of God. 4 For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousnes vnto every one that beleueth. 5 For Moses thus describeth the righteousnes which is of the Lawe, That the man which doeth these things, shall liue thereby. 6 But the righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ from aboue) 7 Or, Who shall descend into the deepe? (that is to bring Christ againe from the dead) 8 But what sayth it? The worde is neere thee, euen in thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the worde of faith which we preach. 9 For if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleuue in thine heart, that God raising him vp from the dead, thou shalt be saued: 10 For with the heart man beleueth vnto righteousnes, and with the mouth man confesseth to salvation. 11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoeuer beleueth in him, shall not be ashamed. 12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the Grecian: for he that is Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that call on him. 13 For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued. 14 But how shall they call on him, in whom they haue not beleued? and how shall they beleue in him, of whom they haue not heard?
and howe shall they heare without a preacher? 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, Howe beautifull are the feete of them which bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! 16 But they haue not all obeyed ye Gospel: for Esaias saith, Lord, who hath beleueed our report? 17 Then faith is by hearing, and hearing by the worde of God. 18 But I demaund, Haue they not heard? No doubt their sound went out through all the earth, and their wordes into the endes of the worlde. 19 But I demaund, Did not Israel knowe God? First Moses sayth, I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation that is not my nation, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. 20 And Esaias is bolde, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not, and haue bene made manifest to them that asked not after me. 21 And vnto Israel hee sayth, All the day long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gainsaying people.

11

1 I Demaund then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before. Know ye not what the Scripture sayth of Elias, howe hee communeth with God against Israel, saying, 3 Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seeke my life? 4 But what saith the answere of God to him? I haue reserved vnto my selfe seuen thousand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal. 5 Euen so then at this present time is there a remnant according to the election of grace. 6 And if it be of grace, it is no more of workes: or els were grace no more grace: but if it be of worke, it is no more grace: or els were worke no more worke. 7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that he sought: but the election hath obtained it, and the rest haue bene hardened, 8 According as it is written, God hath giuen them the spirit of slumber: eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare vnto this day. 9 And Dauid sayth, Let their table be made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling blockade, euen for a recompence vnto them. 10 Let their eyes be darkened that they see not, and bowe downe their backe alwayes. 11 I demaund then, Haue they stumbled, that they should fall? God forbid: but through their fall, salvation commeth vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke them to follow them. 12 Wherefore if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more shall their abundance be? 13 For in that I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of ye Gentiles, I magnifie mine office, 14 To trie if by any meanes I might prouoke them of my flesh to follow them, and might saue some of them. 15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiuing be, but life from the dead? 16 For if the first fruittes be holy, so is the whole lumpe: and if the roote be holy, so are the branches. 17 And though some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Oliue tree, wast graft in for them, and made partaker of the roote, and fatnesse of the Oliue tree. 18 Boast not thy selfe against the branches: and if thou boast thy selfe, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee. 19 Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in. 20 Well: through vnbelief they are broken off, and thou standest by faith: bee not hie minded, but feare. 21 For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed, least he also spare not thee. 22 Beholde therefore the bountifullenesse, and seueritie of God: towarde them which haue fallen, seueritie: but toward thee,
bountifulnesse, if thou continue in his bountifulnesse: or els thou shalt also be cut off. 23 And they also, if they abide not still in vnbelieve, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in againe. 24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature, and wast graffed contrary to nature in a right Oliue tree, how much more shall they that are by nature, bee graffed in their owne Oliue tree? 25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this secret (least ye should bee arrogant in your selues) that partly obstinacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in. 26 And so all Israel shalbe saued, as it is written, The deliuerer shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away the vngodlinesses from Iacob. 27 And this is my covenant to them, When I shall take away their sinnes. 28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes. 29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance. 30 For euen as yee in times past haue not beleued God, yet haue nowe obtained mercie through their vnbelieve: 31 Euen so nowe haue they not beleued by the mercie shewed vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercie. 32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbelieve, that he might haue mercie on all. 33 O the deepenesse of the riches, both of the wisdome, and knowledge of God! howe vnsearcheable are his judgements, and his wayes past finding out! 34 For who hath knoen the minde of the Lord? or who was his counsellour? 35 Or who hath giuen vnto him first, and he shalbe recompened? 36 For of him, and through him, and for him are all things: to him be glory for euer. Amen.

12
1 I Beseech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that yee giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruing of God. 2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this worlde, but bee yee changed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prooue what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is. 3 For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euer yee that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstande aboue that which is meete to vnderstand, but that he vnderstande according to sobrietie, as God hath dealt to euer yee man the measure of faith. 4 For as wee haue many members in one body, and all members haue not one office, 5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and euer one, one anothers members. 6 Seeing then that we haue gifts that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether we haue prophesie, let vs prophesie according to the portion of faith: 7 Or an office, let vs waite on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching: 8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that distributeth, let him doe it with simplicitie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercie, with cheerefulness. 9 Let loue be without dissimulation. Abhorre that which is euill, and cleauce vnto that which is good. 10 Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In giuing honer, goe one before another, 11 Not slouthfull to do seruice: seruent in spirit seruing the Lord, 12 Reioycing in hope, pacient in tribulation, continuating in prayer, 13 Distributing vnto the necessitie of the Saintes: giuing your selues to hospitalitie. 14 Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, I say, and curse not. 15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, and weepe with them that weepe. 16 Be of like affection one towards another: be not hie minded: but make your selues equall to them of the lower sort: be not wise in your selues. 17 Recompence to no man euill for euill: procure things honest in the sight of all men. 18 If it bee possible,
as much as in you is, have peace with all men. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selues, but giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine: I will repay, saith the Lord. 20 Therefore, if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head. 21 Be not overcomne of euill, but overcomne euill with goodnesse.

13

1 Let euery soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the pow- ers that be, are ordained of God. 2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall re- ceive to themselfes condemnation. 3 For Magistrates are not to be feared for good workes, but for euill. Wilt thou then bee without feare of the power? doe well: so shalt thou haue praise of the same. 4 For he is ye minister of God for thy wealth, but if thou do euill, feare: for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euill. 5 Wherefore ye must bee subiect, not because of wrath only, but also for conscience sake. 6 For, for this cause ye pay also tribute: for they are Gods ministers, applying themselfes for the same thing. 7 Giue to all men therefore their duettie: tribute, to whom yee owe tribute: custome, to whom custome: feare, to whome feare: honour, to whom ye owe hon- our. 8 Owe nothing to any man, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Lawe. 9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adul- terie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnes, Thou shalt not coute: and if there be any other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this say- ing, even in this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 10 Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour: there- fore is loue the fulfilling of the Lawe. 11 And that, considering the season, that it is now time that we should arise from sleepe: for now is our salu- ation neerer, then when we beleued it. 12 The night is past, and the day is at hande, let vs therefore cast away the worke of darkenesse, and let vs put on the armour of light, 13 So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in gluttonie, and drunkennesse, nei- ther in chambering and wantonnes, nor in strife and enuying. 14 But put yee on the Lord JESUS CHRIST, and take no thought for the flesh, to fulfill the lusters of it.

14

1 Him that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, but not for con- troueries of disputations. 2 One beleueth that he may eate of all things: and another, which is weake, eatheth herbes. 3 Let not him that eatheth, despise him that eatheth not: and let not him which eatheth not, condemne him that eatheth: for God hath receiued him. 4 Who art thou that condemnest another mans seru- ant? hee standeth or falleth to his owne master: yea, he shalbe established: for God is able to make him stand. 5 This man esteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euery day alike: let euery man be fully perswaded in his minde. 6 He that obserueth the day, obserueth it to the Lord: and he that obserueth not the day, obserueth it not to the Lord. He that eatheth, eatheth to the Lord: for he giueth God thankes: and he that eatheth not, eatheth not to the Lord, and giueth God thankes. 7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, neither doeth any die to himselfe. 8 For whether wee liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lords. 9 For Christ therefore died and rose againe, and reuied, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke.
10 But why doest thou condemne thy brother? or why doest thou despise thy brother? for we shall all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ. 11 For it is written, I lie, sayth the Lord, and every knee shall bowe to me, and all tongues shall confesse vnto God. 12 So then euer one of vs shall giue accounts of himselfe to God. 13 Let vs not therefore judge one another any more: but vse your iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before his brother. 14 I know, and am perswaded through the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing vnclene of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vnclene, to him it is vnclene. 15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meate, nowe walkest thou not charitably: destroy not him with thy meate, for whome Christ dyed. 16 Cause not your commoditie to be euill spoken of. 17 For the kingdome of God, is not meate nor drinke, but righteousnes, and peace, and ioye in the holy Ghost. 18 For whosoever in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable vnto God, and is approoued of men. 19 Let vs then follow those things which concerne peace, and wherewith one may edifie another. 20 Destroy not the worke of God for meates sake: all things in deede are pure: but it is euill for the man which eateth with offence. 21 It is good neither to eate flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stubbleth, or is offended, or made weake. 22 Hast thou faith? haue it with thy selfe before God: blessed is hee that condemneth not himselfe in that thing which he aloweth. 23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, because he eateth not of faith: and whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

15

1 We which are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selues. 2 Therefore let euery man please his neighbour in that that is good to edification. 3 For Christ also would not please himselfe, but as it is written, The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me. 4 For whatsoeuer things are written aforesette, are writte for our learning, that we through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope. 5 Now the God of patience and consolation giue you that ye be like minded one towards another, according to Christ Iesus. 6 That ye with one minde, and with one mouth may prayse God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ. 7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God. 8 Nowe I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcission, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers. 9 And let the Gentiles prayse God, for his mercie, as it is written, For this cause I wil confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name. 10 And againe he saith, Rejoyce, ye Gentiles with his people. 11 And againe, Prayse the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laude ye him, all people together. 12 And againe Esaias sayth, There shall be a roote of Jesse, and hee that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust. 13 Nowe the God of hope fill you with all ioye, and peace in belieuing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the holy Ghost. 14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnes, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another. 15 Neuerthelesse, brethren, I haue somewhat boldly after a sort written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is giuen me of God, 16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministiring the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the
Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost. 17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in those things which pertaine to God. 18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient in worde and deede, 19With the power of signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem, and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ. 20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should haue built on another mans foundation. 21 But as it is written, To whome hee was not spoken of, they shall see him, and they that heard not, shall vnderstand him. 22 Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you: 23 But nowe seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and also haue bene desirous many yeeres agoe to come vnto you, 24 When I shall take my journey into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your company. 25 But now go I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints. 26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certayne distribution vnto the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem. 27 For it hath pleased them, and their ddeters are they: for if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spiritual things, their dettie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things. 28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed them this fruite, I will passe by you into Spaine. 29 And I knowe when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ. 30 Also brethren, I beseeche you for our Lord Iesus Christes sake, and for the loue of the spirit, that ye would striue with me by prayers to God for me, 31 That I may be deliuered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my service which I haue to doe at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saintes, 32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed. 33 Thus the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

16

1 I Commende vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruaunt of the Church of Cenchrea: 2 That ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth Saintes, and that ye assist her in whatsoever businesse she needeth of your ayde: for she hath giuen hospitalitie vnto many, and to me also. 3 Greeete Priscilla, and Aquila my fellowe helpers in Christ Iesus, 4 (Which haue for my life laide downe their owne necke. Vnto whom not I onely giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.) 5 Likewise greeete the Church that is in their house. Salute my beloved Epenetus, which is the first fruite of Achaia in Christ. 6 Greeete Marie which bestowed much labour on vs. 7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cousins and fellowe prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me. 8 Greeete Amplias my beloved in the Lord. 9 Salute Vrbanus our fellow helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved. 10 Salute Apelles approoued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus frien- des. 11 Salute Herodon my kins- man. Greeete them which are of the friendes of Narcissus which are in the Lord. 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which women labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which woman hath laboured much in the Lord. 13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. 14 Greeete Asyncritus, Phleg- gon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them. 15 Salute Philologus and Iu- lias, Nereas, and his sister, and Olymp- pas, and all the Saintes which are
with them. 16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you. 17 Now I beseech you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoide them. 18 For they that are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, and with faire speach and flattering deceiue the heartes of the simple. 19 For your obedience is come abroade among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I woulde haue you wise vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill. 20 The God of peace shall treade Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. 21 Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsemen, salute you. 22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord. 23 Gains mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother. 24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen. 25 To him nowe that is of power to establish you according to my Gospel, and preaching of Iesus Christ, by the reuelation of the mysterie, which was kept secrete since the worlde began: 26 (But nowe is opened, and published among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophetes, at the commande-ment of the everlasting God for the obedience of faith) 27 To God, I say, only wise, be praise through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen. ‘Written to the Romans from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe, seruaunt of the Church which is at Cenchrea.’
1 Corinthians 1:1

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS

1 Paul called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and our brother Sosthenes, 2 unto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, Saints by calling, with all that call on the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place, both their Lord, and ours: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God, which is giuen you in Jesus Christ, 5 That in all things ye are made rich in him, in all kinde of speach, and in all knowledge: 6 As the testimonie of Jesus Christ hath bene confirmed in you: 7 So that ye are not destitute of any gift: wayting for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. 8 Who shall also confirme you vnto the ende, that ye may be blamelesse, in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 God is faithfull, by whom ye are called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Jesus Christ our Lord. 10 Nowe I beseeche you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speake one thing, and that there be no dissensions among you: but be ye knit together in one mind, and in one judgement. 11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you. 12 Nowe this I say, that every one of you saith, I am Pauls, and I am Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Christs. 13 Is Christ deuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the name of Paul? 14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but Crispus, and Galus, 15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized into mine owne name. 16 I baptized also the household of Stephanas: furthermore knowe I not, whether I baptized any other. 17 For CHRIST sent me not to baptized, but to preache the Gospel, not with wisdome of wordes, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect. 18 For that preacheing of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but vnsto vs, which are saued, it is the power of God. 19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and will cast away the understanding of the prudent. 20 Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made the wisedome of this world foolishnesse? 21 For seeing the world by wisedome knewe not God in the wisedome of GOD, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preacheing to saue them that beleueue: 22 Seeing also that the Iewes require a signe, and the Grecians seeke after wisdome. 23 But wee preache Christ crucified: vnto the Iewes, euen a stumbling blokke, and vnto the Grecians, foolishnesse: 24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, we preache Christ, the power of God, and the wisedome of God. 25 For the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men, and the weakesnes of God is stronger then men. 26 For brethren, you see your calling, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called. 27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise, and God hath chosen the weake thinges of the worlde, to confound the mightie thinges. 28 And vile thinges of the worlde and thinges which are despised, hath God chosen, and thinges which are not, to bring to nought thinges that are, 29 That no flesh shoulde reioyce in his presence. 30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption, 31 That, according as it is written, Hee that reioyce thou, let him reioyce in the Lord.
2

And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of wordes, or of wisedome, shewing vnto you the testimonie of God. 2 For I esteemed not to knowe any thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified. 3 And I was among you in weakeenesse, and in feare, and in much trembling. 4 Neither stooed my woorde, and my preaching in the entising speach of mans wisdom, but in plaine evidence of the Spirite and of power, 5 That your faith should not be in the wisdome of men, but in the power of God. 6 And we speake wisedome among them that are perfect: not the wisedome of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to nought. 7 But we speake the wisedome of God in a mysterie, euen the hid wisdome, which God had determined before the world, vnto our glory. 8 Which none of the princes of this world hath knowen: for had they known it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glory. 9 But as it is written, The thinges which eye hath not seene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, are, which God hath prepared for them that loue him. 10 But God hath reveueld them vnto vs by his Spirite: for the spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God. 11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirite of a man, which is in him? euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the spirit of God. 12 Nowe we haue receiuede not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might knowe the thinges that are giuen to vs of God. 13 Which thinges also we speake, not in the wordes which mans wisedome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual things. 14 But the naturall man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither can hee knowe them, be-

3

And I could not speake vnto you, brethren, as vnto spiritual men, but as vnto carnall, euen as vnto babes in Christ. 2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meat: for yee were not yet able to beare it, neither yet nowe are yee able. 3 For yee are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you enuying, and strife, and diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men? 4 For when one sayeth, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are yee not carnall? 5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the ministers by whom yee beleeued, and as the Lord gaue to euery man? 6 I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God gaue the increase. 7 So then, neither is hee that planteth any thing, neither hee that watreth, but God that giueth the increase. 8 And he that planteth, and he that watreth, are one, and euery man shall receiue his wages, according to his labour. 9 For we together are Gods labourers: yee are Gods husbandrie, and Gods building. 10 According to the grace of God giuen to mee, as a skilfull master builder, I haue laide the foundation, and another buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heed how he buildeth vpon it. 11 For other foundation can no man laie, then that which is laied, which is Iesus Christ. 12 And if any man builde on this foundation, golde, siluer, precious stones, timber, haye, or stubble, 13 Every mans worke shalbe made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shalbe reueiled by the fire: and the fire shall trie euery mans worke of what sort it is. 14 If any mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages.
15 If any mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shalbe saued himselfe: neuerthelesse yet as it were by the fire. 16 Knowe ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? 17 If any man destroy the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are. 18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you seeme to be wise in this world, let him be a foolke, that he may be wise. 19 For the wisdome of this worlde is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, He catcheth the wise in their owne craftinesse. 20 And againe, The Lord knoweth that the thoughtes of the wise be vaine. 21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for all things are yours. 22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they be things present, or things to come, euen all are yours. 23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

4

1 Let a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God: 2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euery man be found faithfull. 3 As touching me, I passe very little to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe. 4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord. 5 Therefore iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will lighten things that are hid in darkenesse, and make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall euery man haue praise of God. 6 Nowe these things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that ye might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, that one swell not against another for any mans cause. 7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou, that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it? 8 Nowe ye are full: nowe ye are made rich: ye reigne as kings without vs, and would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you. 9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gasing stocke vnto the worlde, and to the Angels, and to men. 10 We are foloes for Christes sake, and ye are wise in Christ: we are weake, and ye are strong: ye are honourable, and we are despised. 11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place, 12 And labour, working with our owne handes: we are reuiled, and yet we blesse: we are persecuted, and suffer it. 13 We are euill spoken of, and we pray: we are made as the filth of the world, the offskowring of all things, vnto this time. 14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued children I admonish you. 15 For though ye haue tenne thousand instructours in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel. 16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye folowers of me. 17 For this cause haue I sent vnto youTimoltheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, which shall put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ as I teache euery where in euery Church. 18 Some are puffed vp as though I woulde not come vnto you. 19 But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will knowe, not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, but the power. 20 For the kingdome of God is not in worde, but in power. 21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in ye spirite of meekenes?  

5

1 It is heard certainly that there is fornication among you: and such for-
ication as is not once named among
the Gentiles, that one should haue his
fathers wife. 2 And ye are puffed vp
and haue not rather sorrowed, that he
which hath done this deede, might be
put from among you. 3 For I verely
as absent in bodie, but present in
spirit, haue determined already as
though I were present, that he that
hath thus done this thing, 4 When ye
are gathered together, and my spirit,
in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,
that such one, I say, by the power of
our Lord Iesus Christ, 5 Be deliuered
vnto Satan, for the destruction of the
flesh, that the spirit may be saued
in the day of the Lord Jesus. 6 Your
reioyczing is not good: knowe ye not
that a little leauen, leaueneth ye whole
lumpe? 7 Purge out therefore the
olde leauen, that ye may be a newe
lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for
Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for
ts. 8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast,
not with olde leauen, neither in the
leauen of maliciousnes and wicked-
nesse: but with the vnleauened bread
of synceritie and trueth. 9 I wrote
vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should
not companie together with fornica-
tours, 10 And not altogether with the
fornicatours of this world, or with
the couetous, or with extortioners, or
with idolaters: for then ye must goe
out of the world. 11 But nowe I haue
written vnto you, that ye companie
not together: if any that is called a
brother, be a fornicatory, or coue-
tous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or
a drunkard, or an extortioner, with
such one eate not. 12 For what haue
I to doe, to judge them also which are
without? doe ye not judge them that
are within? 13 But God iudgeth them
that are without. Put away therefore
from among your selues that wicked
man.

6

1 Dare any of you, hauing busi-
nesse against an other, be judged
vnder the vniust, and not vnder the
Saintes? 2 Doe ye not knowe, that the
Saintes shall iudge the worlde? If the
worlde then shalbe iudged by
you, are ye vnworthie to iudge the
smallest matters? 3 Knowe ye not
that we shall iudge the Angels? howe
much more, things that perteine to
this life? 4 If then ye haue judgements
of things perteining to this life, set vp
them which are least esteemed in the
Church. 5 I speake it to your shame.
Is it so that there is not a wise man
among you? no not one, that can
iudge betweene his brethren? 6 But a
brother goeth to law with a brother,
and that vnder the infidels. 7 Nowe
therefore there is altogether infirmitie
in you, in that yee goe to lawe one
with another: why rather suffer ye
not wrong? why rather susteine yee
not harme? 8 Nay, yee your selues doe
wrong, and doe harme, and that to
your brethren. 9 Knowe yee not that
the vnrighteous shall not inherit the
kingdome of God? Be not deceived:
neither fornicatours, nor idolaters,
nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor bug-
gerers, 10 Nor theues, nor couetous,
nor drunkards, nor raileris, nor extor-
tioners shall inherit the kingdome
of God. 11 And such were some of
you: but yee are washed, but yee are
sanctified, but yee are iustified in the
Name of the Lord Jhesu, and by the
Spirit of our God. 12 All things are
lawfull vnto mee, but all things are
not profitable. I may doe all things,
but I will not be brought vnder the
power of any thing. 13 Meates are
ordeined for the bellie, and the belly
for the meates: but God shall destroy
both it, and them. Nowe the bodie is
not for fornication, but for the Lord,
and the Lord for the bodie. 14 And
God hath also raised vp the Lord,
and shall raise vs vp by his power.
15 Knowe yee not, that your bodies
are the members of Christ? shall I
then take the members of Christ, and
make them the members of an harlot?
God forbid. 16 Doe ye not knowe,
that he which coupleth himselfe with
an harlot, is one body? for two,
7

1 Nowe concerning the things whereof ye wrote vnto mee, It were good for a man not to touche a woman. 2 Neuertheles, to auoide fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband. 3 Let the husband giue vnto the wife due benevolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband. 4 The wife hath not the power of her owne bodie, but ye husband: and likewise also the husband hath not ye power of his owne body, but the wife. 5 Defraude not one another, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and praiere, and againe come together that Satan tempt you not for your incontinentie. 6 But I speake this by permission, not by commandement. 7 For I woulde that all men were euen as I my selfe am: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that. 8 Therefore I say vnto the vnmaried, and vnto the widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I doe. 9 But if they cannot abstaine, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burne. 10 And vnto ye maried I comand, not I, but ye Lord, Let not ye wife depart from her husband. 11 But and if shee depart, let her remaine vnmaried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away his wife. 12 But to ye remnant I speake, and not ye Lord, If any brother haue a wife, ye beleueueth not, if she be content to dwell with him, let him not forsake her. 13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleueueth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forsake him. 14 For the vnbeleeuings husband is sanctified to the wife, and the vnbeleeuine wife is sanctified to the husband, els were your children vnclene: but nowe are they holie. 15 But if the vnbeleeuine depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in sujection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace. 16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thine husband? Or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife? 17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke: and so ordaine I, in all Churches. 18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not gather his vncccircumcision: is any called vnccircumcised? let him not be circumcised. 19 Circumcision is nothing, and vnccrcumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God. 20 Let euery man abide in the same vocation wherein he was called. 21 Art thou called being a seruant? care not for it: but if yet thou maiest be free, vse it rather. 22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a seruant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christes seruant. 23 Yee are bought with a price: be not the seruants of men. 24 Brethren, let euery man, wherein hee was called, therein abide with God. 25 Nowe concerning virgines, I haue no commandement of the Lord: but I giue mine aduise, as one that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull. 26 I suppose then this to bee good for the present necessitie: I meane that it is good for a man so to be. 27 Art thou bounde vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife. 28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgine marrie,
8

1 And as touching things sacrificed vnto idols, wee knowe that wee all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth. 2 Nowe, if any man thinke that hee knoweth any thing, hee knoweth nothing yet as hee ought to knowe. 3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowne of him. 4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idoles, we knowe that an idole is nothing in the worlde, and that there is none other God but one. 5 For though there bee that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth (as there be many gods, and many lords) 6 Yet vnto vs there is but one God, which is that Father, of whome are all things, and we in him: and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whome are all things, and we by him. 7 But every man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the idole, vntill this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled. 8 But meate maketh not vs acceptable to God, for neither if we eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse. 9 But take heede lest by any means this power of yours be an occasion of falling, to them that are weake. 10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the idoles temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weake, be boldened to eate those things which are sacrificed to idoles? 11 And through thy knowledge shall the weake brother perish, for whome Christ died. 12 Nowe when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ. 13 Wherefore if meate offende my brother, I wil eate no flesh while the world standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

9

1 Am I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the
Lord? 2 If I be not an Apostle vnlo other, yet doutelesse I am vnlo you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord. 3 My defence to them that examine mee, is this, 4 Haue we not power to eat and to drinke? 5 Or haue we not power to lead about a wife being a sister, as well as the rest of the Apostles, and as the bretheren of the Lord, and Cephas? 6 Or I only and Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke? 7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne coste? who planteth a vineyarde, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke? 8 Say I these things according to man? saith not the Lawe the same also? 9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moses, Thou shalt not mussels the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: dooth God take care for oxen? 10 Either saith hee it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written, that he which eareth, should eare in hope, and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope. 11 If wee haue sowen vnlo you spirituall things, is it a great thing if we reape your carnall things? 12 If others with you bee partakers of this power, are not we rather? neuerthesesse, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things, that we should not hinder the Gospel of Christ. 13 Doe ye not knowe, that they which minster about the holy things, eate of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar? 14 So also hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach ye Gospel, should liue of the Gospel. 15 But I haue vsed none of these things: neither wrote I these things, that it should be so done vnlo me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my reioycing vaine. 16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is laid vpon me, and woe is vnlo me, if I preach not the Gospel. 17 For if I do it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I do it against my will, notwithstanding the dispensation is committed vnlo me. 18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Gospel, I make the Gospel of Christ free, that I abuse not mine authoritie in ye Gospel. 19 For though I bee free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnlo all men, that I might winne the moe. 20 And vnlo the Iewes, I become as a Iewe, that I may winne them that are vnlo the Lawe: 21 To them that are without Lawe, as though I were vnlo Lawe, (when I am not without Lawe as pertaining to God, but am in the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe: 22 To the weeke I become as weeke, that I may winne the weeke: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some. 23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you. 24 Knowe ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine. 25 And euery man that proueth matters, abstaineth from all things: and they do it to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vn corruptible. 26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre. 27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into subiection, lest by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be reproued.

10

1 Moreouer, bretheren, I woulde not that yee shoulde bee ignorant, that all our fathers were vnlo that cloude, and all passed through that sea, 2 And were all baptized vnlo Moses, in that cloude, and in that sea, 3 And did all eat the same spiritual meat, 4 And did all drinke the same spiritual drinke (for they dranke of the spiritual Rocke
that folowed them: and the Rocke was Christ) 5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were ouerthrown in ye wildernes. 6 Nowe these things are our ensamples, to the intent that we should not lust after euil things as they also lusted. 7 Neither bee ye idolaters as were some of them, as it is written, The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play. 8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed fornication, and fell in one day three and twentie thousand. 9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted him, and were destroyed of serpents. 10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. 11 Nowe all these things came vnto them for ensamples, and were written to admonish vs, vpon whome the endes of the world are come. 12 Wherefore, let him that thin-keth he standeth, take heed lest he fall. 13 There hath no tentation taken you, but such as appertaine to man: and God is faithfull, which will not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you be able, but wil euen glie the is-sue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it. 14 Wherefore my be-loued, flee from idoliatr. 15 I speake as vnto them which haue understand-ing: jugde ye what I say. 16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? 17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, because we all are partakers of one bread. 18 Beholde Israel, which is after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? 19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing? 20 Nay, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not vnto God: and I would not that ye should haue fellowship with the deuils. 21 Ye can not drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of the deuils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of the deuils. 22 Doe we proueke the Lord to anger? are we stronger then he? 23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not. 24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man anothers wealth. 25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, eate ye, and aske no question for conscience sake. 26 For the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is. 27 If any of them which beleue not, call you to a feast, and if ye wil go, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake. 28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, and for the con-science (for the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is) 29 And the conscience, I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my lib-ertie be condemned of another mans conscience? 30 For if I through Gods benefite be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I glie thanks? 31 Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God. 32 Gie none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of God: 33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profite, but the profite of many, that they might be saued.

11

1 Be yee followers of mee, euen as I am of Christ. 2 Now brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, and keepe the ordi-nances, as I deliuered them to you. 3 But I wil that ye know, that Christ is the head of euery man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head. 4 Euery man praying or prophecying hauing any thing on his head, dishonoureth his head. 5 But
euery woman that prayeth or propheceth bare headed, dishonoureth her head: for it is even one very thing, as though she were shauen. 6 Therefore if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered. 7 For a man ought not to couer his head: for as much as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. 8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man. 9 For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake. 10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on her head, because of the Angels. 11 Neuertheles, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord. 12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things are of God. 13 Iudge in your selues, Is it comely that a woman pray vncto God vncoverd? 14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long heare, it is a shame vncto him? 15 But if a woman haue long heare, it is a prayse vnto her: for her heare is giuen her for a couering. 16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God. 17 Nowe in this that I declare, I prayse you not, that ye come together, not with profite, but with hurt. 18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissentions among you: and I beleue it to be true in some part. 19 For there must be heresies euem among you, that they which are approoued among you, might be known. 20 When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eate the Lords Supper. 21 For euery man when they should eate, taketh his owne supper afore, and one is hungry, and another is drunken. 22 Haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you? shall I praye you in this? I prayse you not. 23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, to wit, That the Lord Iesus in the night when he was betrayed, tooke bread: 24 And when hee had giuen thanks, hee brake it, and sayde, Take, eate: this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me. 25 After the same maner also he tooke the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the Newe Testamento in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me. 26 For as often as ye shall eate this bread, and drinke this cup, ye shewe the Lords death till hee come. 27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eate this bread, and drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shall be guiltie of the body and blood of the Lord. 28 Let euery man therefore examine hiselffe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup. 29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, because he discerneth not the Lords body. 30 For this cause many are weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe. 31 For if we would judge our selues, we should not be judged. 32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned with the world. 33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tary one for another. 34 And if any man be hungry, lett him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.
the holy Ghost. 4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.
And there are diversities of administrations, but the same Lord, 6 And there are diversities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all. 7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is giuen to euery man, to profite withall. 8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the word of wisdome: and to another the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit: 9 And to another is giuen faith by the same Spirit: and to another the giftes of healing, by the same Spirit: 10 And to another the operations of great works: and to another, prophecy: and to another, the discerning of spirits: and to another, diversities of tongues: and to another, the interpretation of tongues. 11 And all these things worketh one and the selfe same Spirit, distributing to euery man seuerally as he will. 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, yet are but one body: euen so is Christ. 13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we bee Iewes, or Grecians, whether we be bonde, or free, and haue bene all made to drinke into one Spirit. 14 For the body also is not one member, but many. 15 If the foote would say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body? 16 And if the eare would say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body? 17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smellling? 18 But nowe hath God disposed the members euery one of them in the bodie at his owne pleasure. 19 For if they were all one member, where were the body? 20 But now are there many members, yet but one body. 21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feete, I haue no neede of you. 22 Yea, much rather those members of the body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessarie. 23 And vpon those members of the body, which wee thinke most vnhoneste, put wee more honestie on: and our vncomely parts haue more comelinesse on. 24 For our comely partes neede it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honour to that part which lacked, 25 Lest there should be any diuision in the body: but that the members shoulde haue the same care one for another. 26 Therefore if one member suffer, all suffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it. 27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members for your part. 28 And God hath or- dained some in the Church: as first Apostles, secondly Prophete, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the giftes of healing, helpers, gouernours, diuersitie of tongues. 29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophete? are all teachers? 30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interprete? 31 But desire you the best giftes, and I will yet shewe you a more excellent way.

13
1 Though I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, and haue not loue, I am as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymbal. 2 And though I had the gift of prophesie, and kneue all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could remoue mountaines and had not loue, I were nothing. 3 And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing. 4 Loue suffreth long: it is bountifull: loue enueth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp: it doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not provoked to anger: it thin-keth not euill: 6 It reioyceth not in
iniquitie, but reioyceth in the truelth:  
7 It suffreth all things: it beleu eth all things: it hopeth all things: it endur eth all things.  
8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecying be abolishe, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanishe away.  
9 For we knowe in part, and we prophesie in part.  
10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shalbe abolishe.  
11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstoode as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.  
12 For nowe we see through a glasse darkely: but then shall wee see face to face.  
13 And nowe abideth faith, hope and loue, euene these three: but the chieuest of these is loue.

14  
1 Followe after loue, and couet spirituall giftes, and rather that ye may prophesie.  
2 For hee that speakeh a strange tongue, speakeh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth him: howbeit in the spirit he speakeh secret things.  
3 But he that prophesieh, speakeh vnto me to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.  
4 He that speakeh strange language, edifieth himselfe: but hee that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.  
5 I would that ye all spake strange languages, but rather that ye prophesieth: for greater is hee that prophesieth, then hee that speakeh diuers tongues, except hee expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.  
6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto you speaking diuers tongues, what shall I profite you, except I speake to you, either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?  
7 Moreover things without life which giue a sounde, whether it be a pipe or an harpe, except they make a distinction in the soundes, how shall it be knoewn what is piped or harped?

8 And also if the trumpet giue an vn certaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to battell?  
9 So likewise you, by the tongue, except yee utter wordes that haue signification, howe shall it be vnderstand what is spoken? for ye shall speake in the ayre.  
10 There are so many kinds of voyces (as it commeth to passe) in the world, and none of them is dumme.  
11 Except I know then the power of ye voyce, I shall be vnto him that speakeh a barbarian, and he that speakeh, shalbe a barbarian vnto me.  
12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spirituall giftes, seeke that ye may excell vnto the edifiying of the Church.  
13 Wherefore, let him that speakeh a strange tongue, pray, that he may interprete.  
14 For if I pray in a strange touge, my spirit prayeth: but mine vnderstanding is without fruite.  
15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, but I wil pray with the vnderstanding also: I wil sing with the spirite, but I will sing with the vnderstanding also.  
16 Else, when thou bluest with the spirit, howe shall hee that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, seeing he knoweth not what thou sayest?  
17 For thou verely giuest thankes well, but the other is not edified.  
18 I thanke my God, I speake languages more then ye all.  
19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue wordes with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then ten thousande wordes in a strange tongue.  
20 Brethren, be not children in vnderstanding, but as concerning maliciousnes be children, but in vnderstanding be of a ripe age.  
21 In the Lawe it is written, By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this peole: yet so shall they not heare me, sayth the Lord.  
22 Wherefore strange tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleue, but to them that beleueth not: but prophecying serueth not for them that beleue
not, but for them which beleue. 23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all speake strange tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleue not, will they not say, that ye are out of your wittes? 24 But if all prophacie, and there come in one that beleueth not, or one vnlearned, hee is rebuked of all men, and is judged of all, 25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face and worship God, and say plainly that God is in you in deed. 26 What is to be done then, brethren? when ye come together, according as every one of you hath a Psalme, or hath doctrine, or hath a tongue, or hath reuelation, or hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifying. 27 If any man speake a strange tongue, let it be by two, or at the most, by three, and that by course, and let oneinterprete. 28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, which speaketh languages, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God. 29 Let the Prophets speake two, or three, and let the other judge. 30 And if any thing be reueiled to another that sitteth by, let the first holde his peace. 31 For ye may all prophacie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort. 32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets. 33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as we see in all ye Churches of the Saints. 34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but they ought to be subiect, as also the Lawe sayth. 35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church. 36 Came the worde of God out from you? either came it vnto you onely? 37 If any man thinke him selfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord. 38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. 39 Wherefore, brethren, couet to prophacie, and forbid not to speake languages. 40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

15

1 Moreouer brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel, which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue, 2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleuued in vaine. 3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the Scriptures, 4 And that he was buried, and that he arose the third day, according to the Scriptures, 5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue. 6 After that, he was seene of more then fiue hudreth brethren at once: whereof many remaine vnto this present, and some also are asleepe. 7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all the Apostles. 8 And last of all he was seene also of me, as of one borne out of due time. 9 For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God. 10 But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me. 11 Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue ye beleued. 12 Now if it be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: 14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine. 15 And we are found also false witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God, that he hath raised vp Christ: whoke he hath not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised. 16 For if
the dead be not raised, then is Christ not raised. 17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine: ye are yet in your sinnes. 18 And so they which are a sleepe in Christ, are perished. 19 If in this life onely wee haue hope in Christ, we are of all men the most miserable. 20 But nowe is Christ risen from the dead, and was made the first fruites of them that slept. 21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. 22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made alie, 23 But euerie man in his owne order: the first fruites is Christ, afterward, they that are of Christ, at his comming shall rise againe. 24 Then shalbe the end, when he hath deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power. 25 For he must reigne till hee hath put all his enemies vnder his feete. 26 The last enemie that shalbe destroyed, is death. 27 For he hath put downe all things vnder his feete. (And when he saith that all things are subdude to him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put downe all things vnder him.) 28 And when all things shalbe subduded vn to him, then shall the Sonne also himselfe be subiect vn to him, that did subdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all. 29 Els what shall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for dead? 30 Why are wee also in leopardie euerie houre? 31 By your rejoycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die dayly. 32 If I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus after ye maner of men, what aduantageth it me, if the dead be not raised vp? let vs eate and drinke: for to morowe we shall die. 33 Be not deceived: euill speakings corrupt good maners. 34 Awake to liue rightly, and sinne not: for some haue not ye knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame. 35 But some man will say, Howe are the dead raised vp? and with what body come they forth? 36 O foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die. 37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of wheat, or of some other. 38 But God giueth it a body at his pleasure, euen to euerie seede his owne body, 39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another of fishes, and another of birdes. 40 There are also heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glorie of the heauenly is one, and the glorie of the earthly is another. 41 There is another glorie of the sunne, and another glorie of the moone, and another glorie of the starres: for one starre differeth from another starre in glorie. 42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. The bodie is sown in corruption, and is rouses in incorruption. 43 It is sown in dioshonour, and is rouses in glory: it is sown in weakenesse, and is rouses in power. 44 It is sown a naturall body, and is rouses a spirituall body: there is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body. 45 As it is also written, The first man Adam was made a liuing soule: and the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit. 46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward which that is spirituall. 47 The first man is of the earth, earthly: the second man is the Lord from heauen. 48 As is the earthly, such are they that are earthly: and as is the heauenly, such are they also that are heauenly. 49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, so shall we beare the image of the heauenly. 50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God, neither doeth corruption inherite incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a secret thing, We shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the last trumpet: for the trumpet shall blow,
and the dead shal be rysed vp incorruptible, and we shalbe changed. 

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortall must put on immortalitie. 54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then shalbe brought to passe the saying that is written, Death is swallowed vp into victorie. 55 O death where is thy sting? O grave where is thy victorie? 56 The sting of death is sinne: and ye strength of sinne is the Lawe. 57 But thanks be vnto God, which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ. 58 Therefore mybeloued brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmoouable, abundante alwayes in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as ye knowe that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

16

1 Concerning the gathering for the Saintes, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so doe ye also. 2 Euery first day of the weeke, let euery one of you put aside by himselfe, and lay vp as God hath prospered him, that then there be no gatheringes when I come. 3 And when I am come, whomsoever ye shall alowe by letters, them will I sende to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem. 4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall goe with me. 5 Nowe I will come vnto you, after I haue gone through Macedonia (for I will passe through Macedonia.) 6 And it maye be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way, whither soeuer I goe. 7 For I will not see you nowe in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit. 8 And I wil tary at Ephesus vntill Pentecost. 9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me: and there are many aduersaries. 10 Nowe if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euene as I doe. 11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conuey him foorth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren. 12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his mind was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue conuenient time. 13 Watch ye: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, and be strong. 14 Let all your things be done in loue. 15 Nowe brethren, I beseeche you (ye knowe the house of Stephanas, that it is the first frutes of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saintes) 16 That ye be obedient euene vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs and labour. 17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you. 18 For they haue comforted my spirite and yours: acknowledge therefore such men. 19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla with ye Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lord. 20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another, with an holy kisse. 21 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand. 22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration maran-atha. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. 24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen. 'The first Epistle to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, and sent by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.'
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF
PAUL THE APOSTLE TO
THE CORINTHIANS

1 Paul an Apostle of JESVS Christ, by the will of God, and our brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia: Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 2 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God. 3 For as the sufferings of Christ abounde in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ. 4 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and saluation. 5 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much we know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation. 6 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, howe we were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that we altogether doubted, euen of life. 7 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because we shoule not trust in our selues, but in God, which rayseth the dead. 8 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and doeth deliuer vs: in whom we trust, that yet hereafter he will deliuer vs, 9 So that ye labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift bestowed vpon vs for many, thanks may be giuen by many persons for vs. 10 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly purenesse, and not in fleshy wisedome, but by the grace of God wee haue had our couersation in the worlde, and most of all to you wardes. 11 For wee write none other thinges vnto you, then that ye reade or els that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto ye end. 12 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly purenesse, and not in fleshy wisedome, but by the grace of God wee haue had our couersation in the worlde, and most of all to you wardes. 13 For wee write none other thinges vnto you, then that ye reade or els that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto ye end. 14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus. 15 And in this confidence was I minded first to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace, 16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led foorth toward Iudea of you. 17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightnesse? or minde I those thinges which I minde, according to the flesh, that with me should be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay? 18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our worde towarde you was not Yea, and Nay. 19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, that is, by me, and Siluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was Yea. 20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glorie of God through vs. 21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anoynted vs. 22 Who hath also sealed vs, and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. 23 Nowe, I call God for a recorde vnto my soule, that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus. 24 Not that wee haue dominion ouer your faith, but wee are helpers of your ioy: for by faith yee stande.

2 Bvt I determined thus in my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauinesse. 2 For if I make you sorie, who is he then that shoulde make me glad, but ye same which is made sorie by me? 3 And I wrote this same thing vnto you, lest when I came, I should take heauines of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence
haue I in you all, that my ioye is the ioye of you all. 4 For in great affliction, and anguish of heart I wrote vnto you with many teares: not that yee should be made sorie, but that ye might perceiue the loute which I haue, specially vnto you. 5 And if any hath caused sorowwe, the same hath not made mee sorie, but partly (lest I should more charge him) you all. 6 It is sufficient vnto the same man, that hee was rebuked of many. 7 So that nowe contrariwise ye ought rather to forgie him, and comfort him, lest the same should bee swalowed vp with ouer-much heauinesse. 8 Wherefore, I pray you, that you woulde confirmre your loute towards him. 9 For this cause also did I write, that I might knowe the proofe of you, whether yee would be obedient in all things. 10 To whome yee forgie any thing, I forgie also: for verely if I forgae any thing, to whome I forgae it, for your sakes forgae I it in the sight of Christ, 11 Lest Satan should circumuent vs: for we are not ignorant of his enterprises. 12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christs Gospell, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord, 13 I had no rest in my spirite, because I founde not Titus my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went away into Macedonia. 14 Now thankes be vnto God, which alwaies maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place. 15 For wee are vnto God the sweete sauour of Christ, in them that are saued, and in them which perish. 16 To the one we are the sauour of death, vnto death, and to the other the sauour of life, vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things? 17 For wee are not as many, which make marchandise of the woorde of God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God in ye sight of God speake we in Christ.

3

1 Doe we begin to praise our selues againe? or neede we as some other, epistles of recommendation vnto you, or letters of recommendation from you? 2 Yee are our epistle, written in our hearts, which is vnderstand, and read of all men, 3 In that yee are manifest, to be the Epistle of Christ, ministred by vs, and written, not with yncke, but with the Spirite of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. 4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God: 5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues, to thinke any thing, as of our selues: but our sufficiencie is of God, 6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the Newe testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirite: for the letter killeth, but the Spirite giueth life. 7 If then the ministra- tion of death written with letters and ingrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel coulde not beholde the face of Moses, for the glorie of his countenance (which glorie is done away.) 8 Howe shall not the ministra- tion of the Spirite be more glorious? 9 For if the ministerie of condemnation was glorious, much more doeth the ministration of righ- teousnesse exceede in glorie. 10 For euuen that which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, that is, as touching the exceeding glorie. 11 For if that which should be abolished, was glorious, much more shall that which remaineth, be glorious. 12 Seeing then that we haue such trust, we vse great boldnesse of speach. 13 And we are not as Moses, which put a vaile vpon his face, that the children of Israel should not looke vnto the ende of that which should be abolished. 14 Therefore their minde is hard- ened: for vntill this day remaineth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the olde Testament, which vaile in Christ is put away. 15 But euuen vnto this day, whoe Moses is read, the vaile is laid ouer their hearts. 16 Neuerthelesse when their heart shall be turned to the Lord, the vaile shalbe taken away. 17 Nowe the Lord is the Spirite, and where the
Spirite of the Lord is, there is libertie. 
18 But we al behold as in a mirrour 
the glory of the Lord with open face, 
and are changed into the same image, 
from glorie to glorie, as by the Spirit 
of the Lord.

4  
1 Therefore, seeing that we haue 
this ministerie, as we haue receiued 
mercy, we faint not: 2 But haue cast 
from vs ye clokes of shame, and walke 
not in craftines, neither handle we 
the worde of God deceitfully: but in 
declaration of the trueth we approue 
our selues to everie mans conscience 
in the sight of God. 3 If our Gospell 
bee then hid, it is hid to them that 
are lost. 4 In whom the God of this 
world hath blinded the mindes, that 
is, of the infidels, that the light of 
the glorious Gospell of Christ, which 
is the image of God, should not shine 
vtnto them. 5 For we preach not our 
selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and 
our selues your seruaunts for Iesus 
sake. 6 For God that commanded the 
light to shine out of darknesse, is he 
which hath shined in our hearts, to 
give the light of the knowledge of 
the glory of God in the face of Iesus 
Christ. 7 But we haue this treasure in 
earthen vessels, that the excellencie 
of that power might be of God, and 
not of vs. 8 Wee are afflicted on euery 
side, yet are we not in distresse: we 
are in doubt, but yet wee despaire 
not. 9 We are persecuted, but not 
forsaken: cast downe, but we perish 
not. 10 Every where we beare about 
in our bodie the dying of the Lord 
Iesus, that the life of Iesus might 
also be made manifest in our bodies. 
11 For we which liue, are alwaies deli-
uered vtnto death for Iesus sake, that 
the life also of Iesus might be made 
manifest in our mortal flesh. 12 So 
then death worketh in vs, and life 
in you. 13 And because we haue the 
same spirite of faith, according as it 
is written, I beleued, and therefore 
haue I spoken, we also beleue, and 
therefore speake, 14 Knowing that he 
which hath raised vp the Lord Iesus, 
shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, and 
shall set vs with you. 15 For all things 
are for your sakes, that that most 
plenteous grace by the thankesguing 
of many, may redound to the praise 
of God. 16 Therefore we faint not, 
but though our outward man perish, 
yet the inward man is renewed daily. 
17 For our light afflicction which is 
but for a moment, causeth vtnto vs 
a farre most excellent and an eternall 
weight of glorie: 18 While we looke 
not on the things which are seene, 
but on the things which are not seene: 
for the things which are seene, are 
temporall: but the things which are 
not seene, are eternall.

5  
1 For we knowe that if our earthly 
house of this tabernacle be destroyed, 
we haue a building giuen of God, that 
is, an house not made with handes, 
but eternall in the heauens. 2 For 
therefore we sighe, desiring to be 
clothed with our house, which is 
from heauen. 3 Because that if we 
be clothed, we shall not be found 
naked. 4 For in deede we that are 
in this tabernacle, sigh and are bur-
dened, because we would not be vn-
clothed, but would be clothed vpon, 
that mortalitie might be swalowed 
vp of life. 5 And he that hath cre-
ated vs for this thing, is God, who 
also hath giuen vtnto vs the earnest 
of the Spirit. 6 Therefore we are 
always bolde, though we knowe that 
whiles we are at home in the bodie, 
we are absent from the Lord. 7 (For 
we walke by faith, and not by sight.) 
8 Neuerthelessse, we are bolde, and 
loue rather to remoue out of the 
body, and to dwell with the Lord. 
9 Wherefore also we couet, that both 
dwelling at home, and remouing from 
home, we may be acceptable to him. 
10 For we must all appeare before the 
judgement seate of Christ, that every 
man may receiue the things which 
are done in his body, according to 
that he hath done, whether it be
good or euill. 11 Knowing therefore that terrou of the Lord, we persuade men, and we are made manifest vnto God, and I trust also that we are made manifest in your consciences. 12 For we prayse not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue to answere against them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart. 13 For whether we be out of our wit, we are it to God: or whether we be in our right minde, we are it vnto you. 14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs, 15 Because we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead, and he died for all, that they which liue, should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe. 16 Wherefore, henceforth know we no man after the flesh, yea though wee had known Christ after the flesh, yet nowe henceforth know we him no more. 17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, let him be a newe creature. Olde things are passed away: beholde, all things are become newe. 18 And all things are of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto hirselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie of reconciliation. 19 For God was in Christ, and reconciled the world to hirselfe, not imputing their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed to vs the word of reconciliation. 20 Now then are we ambassadours for Christ: as though God did be-seeche you through vs, we pray you in Christes stead, that ye be reconciled to God. 21 For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, which knewe no sinne, that we should be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

6 1 So we therefore as workers togethuer beseech you, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine. 2 For he sayth, I haue hearde thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: beholde nowe the accepted time, beholde nowe the day of saluation. 3 We giue no occa- occasion of offence in any thing, that our ministerie shoulde not be repre- hended. 4 But in all things we approue our selues as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, 5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumults, in labours, 6 By watchings, by fastinges, by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained, 7 By the worde of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse on the right hand, and on the left, 8 By honour, and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceuiers, and yet true: 9 As vnknown, and yet known: as drying, and beholde, we liue: as chastened, and yet not killed: 10 As sorrowing, and yet alway reioycing: as poore, and yet make many riche: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things. 11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our heart is made large. 12 Ye are not kept strait in vs, but ye are kept strait in your owne bowels. 13 Nowe for the same recompence, I speake as to my children, Be you also inlarged. 14 Be not unequally yoked with the infidels: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with vnrighteousnes? and what communion hath light with darkenesse? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath the beleueuer with the infidell? 16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idols? for ye are the Temple of the liuing God: as God hath said, I will dwell among them, and walke there: and I will be their God, and they shalbe my people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and separate your selues, saith the Lord, and touch none vncleane thing, and I wil receiue you. 18 And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shalbe my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord almightie.
7

1 Seing then we haue these promises, dearly beloued, let vs clese our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, and finish our sanctification in the feare of God. 2 Receiue vs: we haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man. 3 I speake it not to your condemnation: for I haue said before, that ye are in our hearts, to die and liue together. 4 I vs great boldnesse of speach toward you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation. 5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side, fightings without, and terrous within. 6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the comming of Titus: 7 And not by his comming onely, but also by the consolation wherewith he was comforted of you, when he tolde vs your great desire, your mourning, your ferverent minde to me warde, so that I reioyced much more. 8 For though I made you sorie with a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same epistle made you sorie, though it were but for a season. 9 I nowe reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs. 10 For godly sorowe causeth repentance vnto saluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorowe causeth death. 11 For beholde, this thing that ye haue bene godly sory, what great care it hath wrought in you: yea, what clearing of yourselves: yea, what indignation: yea, what feare: yea, howe great desire: yea, what a zeale: yea, what reuenge: in all things ye haue shewed your selues, that ye are pure in this matter. 12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did not it for his cause that had done the wrong, neither for his cause that had the iniurie, but that our care toward you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you. 13 Therefore we were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the ioye of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. 14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all things in trueth, even so our boasting vnto Titus was true. 15 And his inwarde affection is more abundant toward you, when he remembret the obedience of you all, and howe with feare and trembling ye receiued him. 16 I reioyce therefore that I may put my confidence in you in all things.

8

1 We doe you also to wit, brethen, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia, 2 Because in great triall of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreme poueritie abounded vnto their rich liberalitie. 3 For to their power (I beare record) yea, and beyonde their power, they were willing, 4 And praied vs with great instance that we woulde receiue the grace, and fellowship of the ministring which is toward the Saints. 5 And this they did, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord, and after vnto vs by the will of God, 6 That we should exhort Titus, that as hee had begon, so he would also accomplish the same grace among you also. 7 Therefore, as yee abound in euery thing, in faith and woorde, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue towards vs, euen so see that yee abound in this grace also. 8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others: therefore prooue I the naturalnesse of your loue. 9 For ye knowe the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that hee being rich, for your sakes became poore, that yee through his poueritie might
be made rich. And I shew mine minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to doe onely, but also to will, a yeare agoe. 

Nowe therefore performe to doe it also, that as there was a readiness to will, euens so yee may performe it of that which yee haue. For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not. Neither is it that other men should be eased and you grieved: But vpon like condition, at this time your abundance supplieth their lacke: That also their abundance may bee for your lacke, that there may be equalitie: As it is written, Hee that gathered much, had nothing ouer, and hee that gathered little, had not the lesse. And thanks be vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you. Because hee accepted the exhortation, yea, hee was so carefull that of his owne accord hee went vnto you. And wee haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise is in the Gospel throughout al the Churches. (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a fellowe in our journey, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glorie of the same Lord, and declaration of your prompt minde) Avoiding this, that no man shoule blame vs in this abundance that is ministred by vs, Proving for honest things, not onely before the Lord, but also before men. And we haue sent with them our brother, whom we haue oft times proued to be diligent in many things, but nowe much more dili- gent, for the great confidence, which I haue in you. Whether any doe inquiere of Titus, he is my fellowe and helper to you ward: or of our brethren, they are messengers of the Churches, and the glorie of Christ. Wherefore shew toward them, and before the Churches the proofe of your loue, and of the reioycing that we haue of you.

1 For as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you. For I knowe your readinesse of minde, whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, and say, that Achaia was prepared a yeare agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked many. Nowe haue I sent the brethren, lest our reioycing ouer you shoulde bee in vaine in this behalfe, that yee (as I haue sayde) be readie: Lest if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you vnprepared, we (that wee may not say, you) should be ashamed in this my constant boast- ing. Wherefore, I thought it neces- sarie to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, and to finish your beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be readie, and come as of beneuolence, and not as of niggardi- nesse. This yet remember, that he which soweth sparingly, shall reap also sparingly, and hee that soweth liberally, shall reap also liberally. As every man wisheth in his heart, so let him giue, not grudgingly, or of necessitie: for God loueth a cheerefull giuer. And God is able to make all grace to abound towards you, that yee alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abounde in euer good worke, (As it is written, He hath sparsed abroad and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence re- mayneth for euer. Also hee that findeth seede to the sower, will minis- ter likewise bread for foode, and multi- ple yeer seede, and increase the fruities of your beneuolence,) That on all partes yee may bee made rich vnto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thankesgiuing vnto God. For the ministiration of this service not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saintes, but also abundantly causeth many to giue thankes to God,
13 (Which by the experiment of this ministration praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospell of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men) 14 And in their praiere for you, to log after you greatly, for the aboundant grace of God in you. 15 Thankes therefore bee vnnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

10

1 Nowe I Paul my selue beseech you by the meekenes, and gentlenes of Christ, which when I am present among you am base, but am bolde toward you being absent: 2 And this I require you, that I neede not to be bolde when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to bee bolde against some, which esteeme vs as though wee walked according to the flesh. 3 Neuerthelesse, though wee walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh. 4 (For the weapons of our warreare are not carnall, but mightie through God, to cast downe holdes) 5 Casting downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ, 6 And hauing ready the vengeance against all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. 7 Looke yee on things after the appearance? If any man trust in himselfe that hee is Christes, let him consider this againe of himself, that as he is Christes, euen so are we Christes. 8 For though I shoulde boast somewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I should haue no shame. 9 This I say, that I may not seeme as it were to feare you with letters. 10 For the letters, sayeth hee, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speache is of no value. 11 Let such one thinke this, that such as wee are in woorde by letters, when we are absent, such wil we be also in deede, when we are present. 12 For wee dare not make our selues of the number, or to compare our selues to them, which praise themselves: but they understand not that they measure themselves with themselves, and compare themselves with themselves. 13 But we wil not reioyce of things, which are not within our measure, but according to the measure of the line, whereof God hath distributed vnnto vs a measure to attaine euven vnnto you. 14 For we strechte not our selues beyonde our measure, as though wee had not attained vnnto you: for euven to you also haue we come in preaching the Gospell of Christ, 15 Not boasting of things which are without our measure: that is, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your faith shall increase, to bee magnified by you according to our line abundantly, 16 And to praise the Gospell in those regions which are beyonde you: not to reioyce in another mans line, that is, in the things that are prepared alreadie. 17 But let him that reioycth, reioyce in the Lord. 18 For hee that praiseth himselfe, is not alowed, but he whome the Lord praiseth.

11

1 Woulde to God, yee coulde suffer a litle my foolishnes, and in deede, ye suffer me. 2 For I am ielous over you, with godly ielousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you as a pure virgine to Christ: 3 But I feare least as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilltie, so your mindes shoule be corrupt from the simplicitie that is in Christ. 4 For if he that commeth, precheth another Iesu whom we haue not preached: or if yee receiue another spirite whome ye haue not receiued: either another Gospell, which yee haue not receiued, ye might well haue suffered him. 5 Verely I suppose that I was not inferior to the very chiefe Apostles. 6 And though I be rude in speaking, yet I am not so in
knowledge, but among you wee haue beene made manifest to the vttremost, in all things. 7 Haue I committed an offence, because I abased myselfe, that ye might be exalted, and because I preached to you ye Gospell of God freely? 8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages of them to doe you service. 9 And when I was present with you, and had neede, I was not slouthfull to the hinderance of any man: for that which was lacking vnto me, the bretheren which came from Macedonie, supplied, and in all things I kept and will keepe myselfe, that I should not be grieuous to you. 10 The truth of Christ is in me, that this reioyceing shall not be shut vp against me in the regions of Achaia. 11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth. 12 But what I doe, that will I doe: that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion, that they might be found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce. 13 For such false apostles are deceitfull workers, and transforme themselves into the Apostles of Christ. 14 And no marueile: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light. 15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his ministers transforme themselues, as though they were the ministers of righteousnes, whose end shall be according to their workes. 16 I say againe, Let no man thinke that I am foolish, or els take mee euen as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a little. 17 That I speake, I speake it not after the Lord: but as it were foolishly, in this my great boasting. 18 Seeing that many reioyce after the fleshe, I will reioyce also. 19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that yee are wise. 20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take your goods, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face. 21 I speake as concerning the reproche: as though that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bold (I speake foolishly) I am bold also. 22 They are Hebrues, so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: they are the seede of Abraham, so am I: 23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prison more plenteously: in death oft. 24 Of the Iewes fuy times receiued I fourtie stripes saue one. 25 I was thrise beaten with roddes: I was once stoned: I suffered thrise shipwracke: night and day haue I bene in the deepe sea. 26 In journeying I was often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wildernes, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren, 27 In weariness and painefulnesse, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in fasting often, in colde and in nakednesse. 28 Beside the things which are outwarde, I am combred dayly, and haue the care of all the Churches. 29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not? 30 If I must needs reioyce, I will reioyce of mine inffirmities. 31 The God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not. 32 In Damascus the gouernour of the people vnder King Aretas, layde watch in the citie of the Damascens, and would haue caught me. 33 But at a window was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and escaped his handes.

12

1 It is not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce: for I will come to visions and revelation of the Lord. 2 I know a man in Christ aboue fourtieene yeeres agone, (whether he were in the body, I can not tell, or out of the body, I can not tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the thirde heaven. 3 And I knowe such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I can not tell: God knoweth)
4 How that he was taken vp into Paradise, and heard words which cannot be spoken, which are not possible for man to utter. 5 Of such a man will I reioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except it bee of mine infirmities. 6 For though I woulde reioyce, I should not be a foole, for I will say the truth: but I refraine, lest any man should thinke of me aboue that hee seeth in me, or that he heareth of me. 7 And lest I should be exalted out of measure through the abundence of revelations, there was giuen vnsto me a pricke in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet mee, because I should not be exalted out of measure. 8 For this thing I besought the Lord thirsie, that it might depart from me. 9 And he said vnsto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weaknesses. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me. 10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong. 11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: yee haue compelled mee: for I ought to haue bene commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnsto the very chiefe Apostles, though I bee nothing. 12 The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes, and wonders, and great workes. 13 For what is it, wherein yee were inferiours vnsto other Churches, except that I haue not bene slouthfull to your hinderance? Forgiue me this wrong. 14 Behold, the thirde time I am ready to come vnsto you, and yet will I not be slouthfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to laye vp for the fathers, but the fathers for the children. 15 And I will most gladly bestow, and will be bestowed for your soules: though the more I loue you, the lesse I am loued. 16 But bee it that I charged you not: yet for as much as I was craftie, I tooke you with guile. 17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I sent vnsto you? 18 I haue desired Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked we not in the selfe same spirit? walked we not in the same steppes? 19 Againe, thinke yee that wee excuse our selues vnsto you? wee speake before God in Christ. But wee doe all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying. 20 For I feare least when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would: and that I shalbe found vnsto you such as ye woulde not, and least there be strife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backebitings, whisperings, swellings and discord. 21 I feare least when I come againe, my God abase me among you, and I shall bewaile many of them which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vn-cleannesse, and fornication, and wantonnesse which they haue committed.

13

1 Lo this is the thirde time that I come vnsto you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every worde stand. 2 I tolde you before, and tell you before: as though I had bene present the seconde time, so write I nowe being absent to them which heretofore haue sinned and to all others, that if I come againe, I will not spare. 3 Seeing that ye seeke experience of Christ, that speaketh in mee, which toward you is not weake, but is mightie in you. 4 For though hee was crucified concerning his infirmitie, yet liueth hee through the power of God. And wee no doubt are weake in him, but we shall liue with him, through the power of God toward you. 5 Prove your selues whether ye are in the faith: examine your selues: knowe yee not your owne selues, howe that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? 6 But I trust that ye shall knowe that wee are not reprobates.
Nowe I pray vnto God that yee doe none euill, not that we should seeme approued, but that ye should doe that which is honest: though we be as reprobates. For wee can not doe any thing against the trueth, but for the trueth. For we are glad when wee are weake, and that ye are strong: this also we wish for, euen your perfection. Therefore write I these thinges being absent, least when I am present, I should vse sharpenesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen mee, to edification, and not to destruction. Finally brethren, fare ye well: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shalbe with you. Greete one another with an holy kisse. All the Saintes salute you. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all, Amen. ‘The seconde Epistle to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia, and sent by Titus and Lucas.’
THE EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE GALATIANS

1 Pavl an Apostple (not of men, neither by man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead) 2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ, 4 Which gaue himself for our sinnes, that he might deliver vs from this present euill world according to the will of God euen our Father, 5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen. 6 I marueile that ye are so soone remoued away vnto another Gospel, from him that had called you in the grace of Christ, 7 Which is not another Gospel, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ. 8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed. 9 As we sayd before, so say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you otherwise, then that ye haue receiued, let him be accursed. 10 For nowe preach I mans doctrine, or Gods? or go I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the servant of Christ. 11 Now I certifie you, brethren, that ye Gospel which was preached of me, was not after man. 12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuелation of Jesus Christ. 13 For ye haue heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jewish religion, how that I persecuted the Church of God extremly, and wasted it, 14 And profited in the Jewish religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers. 15 But when it pleased God (which had separated me from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace) 16 To reuеile his Sonne in me, that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I communicated not with flesh and blood: 17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe vnto Damascus. 18 Then after three yeere I came againe to Hierusalem to visite Peter, and abode with him fiftenee dayes. 19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue James the Lords brother. 20 Nowe the things which I write vnto you, holde, I witnes before God, that I lie not. 21 After that, I went into the coasts of Syria and Cilicia: for I was vknownen by face vnto the Churches of Iuda, which were in Christ. 22 But they had heard onely some say, Hee which persecuted vs in time past, nowe preacheth the faith which before he destroyed. 23 And they glorified God for me.

2

1 Then fourteene yeere after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also. 2 And I went vp by reuелation, and declared vnto them that Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to them that were the chiefe, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine: 3 But neither yet Titus which was with me, though he were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised. 4 To wit, for the false brethren which were craftily sent in, and crept in priuily to spie out our libertie, which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage. 5 To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you. 6 But by them which seemed to be great, I was not taught (whatsoever they were in time past, I am nothing the better: God accepteth no mans person) for they that are the chiefe, did add nothing to me aboue that I had. 7 But contrariwise, when they saw that ye Gospel
Ouer ye vncircumcision was comitted vnto me, as the Gospel ouer ye circumcision was vnto Peter: 8 (For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleship ouer the circumcision, was also mightie by me toward the Gentiles) 9 And when Iames, and Cephas, and Iohn, knew of the grace that was giuen vnto me, which are counted to be pillars, they gaue to me and to Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should preach vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision, 10 Warning onely that we should remember the poore: which thing also I was diligent to doe. 11 And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstood him to his face: for he was to be condemned. 12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision. 13 And the other Iewes played the hypocrites likewise with him, in so much that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocrisie. 14 But when I saw, that they went not ye right way to the true th of ye Gospel, I sayd vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iewe, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes? 15 We which are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, 16 Knowe that a man is not justified by the works of the Law, but by ye faith of Iesus Christ, euen we, I say, haue beleued in Iesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Lawe, because that by the workes of the Lawe, no flesh shalbe justified. 17 If then while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid. 18 For if I build againe the things that I haue destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser. 19 For I through the Lawe am dead to the Lawe, that I might liue vnto God. 20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, yet not I any more, but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen him selfe for me. 21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousnes be by the Lawe, then Christ dyed without a cause.

3

1 O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, and among you crucified? 2 This only would I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spirit by the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith preached? 3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit, ye would now be made perfect by the flesh? 4 Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine? if so be it be euen in vaine. 5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it through the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith preached? 6 Yea rather as Abraham beleued God, and it was imputed to him for righteousnes. 7 Knowe ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. 8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would justifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed. 9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham. 10 For as many as are of the workes of the Lawe, are vnder the curse: for it is written, Cursed is euery man that continueth not in all things, which are written in the booke of the Law, to doe them. 11 And that no man is justified by the Law in the sight of God, it is evident: for the iust shall liue by faith. 12 And the Lawe is not of faith: but the man that shall doe those things, shall liue in them. 13 Christ hath redeemed vs
from the curse of the Lawe, made a curse for vs, (for it is written, Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree) 14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that wee might receive the promise of the Spirite through faith. 15 Brethren, I speake as men do: though it be but a mans covenant, when it is confirmed, yet no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto. 16 Nowe to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. Hee saith not, And to the seedes, as speaking of many: but, And to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ. 17 And this I say, that the covenent that was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was foure hundrith and thirtie yeeres after, can not disanull, that it should make the promise of none effect. 18 For if the inheritance be of the Lawe, it is no more by the promise, but God gau it freely vnto Abraham by promise. 19 Wherefore then serueth the Law? It was added because of the transgressions, til the seed came, vnto the which the promise was made: and it was ordeined by Angels in the hande of a Mediatour. 20 Nowe a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one: but God is one. 21 Is the Lawe then against the promises of God? God forbid: For if there had bene a Lawe giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousnes should haue bene by the Lawe. 22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ should be giuen to them that beleue. 23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Lawe, as vnder a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, which should afterward be reuiled. 24 Wherefore the Lawe was our scholemaster to bring vs to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith. 25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a scholemaster. 26 For ye are al the sonnes of God by faith, in Christ Iesus. 27 For all ye that are baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ. 28 There is neither Iew nor Grecian: there is neither bonde nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus. 29 And if ye be Christes, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heires by promise.

4

1 Then I say, that the heire as long as hee is a childe, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all. 2 But is vnder tutours and gouernours, vntil the time appointed of the Father. 3 Euen so, we when wee were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world. 4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, and made vnder the Lawe, 5 That hee might redeeme them which were vnder the Lawe, that we might receive the adoption of the sonnes. 6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your heartes, which crieth, Abba, Father. 7 Wherefore, thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: now if thou be a sone, thou art also the heire of God through Christ. 8 But euen then, when ye knewe not God, yee did service vnto them, which by nature are not gods: 9 But now seeing ye knowe God, yea, rather are known of God, howe turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto as from the beginning ye wil be in bondage againe? 10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times and yeeres. 11 I am in feare of you, lest I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine. 12 Be ye as I (for I am euen as you) brethren, I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at all. 13 And ye know, how through infirmitie of the flesh, I preached ye Gospel vnto you at the first. 14 And the trial of me which was in my flesh, ye despised not, neither abhorred: but ye received me as an Angel of God, yea, as Christ Iesus. 15 What was then your feliciteit? for I beare you recorde, that if it had
bene possible, ye would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue gien them vnto me. 16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the trueth? 17 They are ielous ouer you amisse: yea, they woulde exclude you, that ye shoulde altogether loue them. 18 But it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you, 19 My litle children, of whom I travaile in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you. 20 And I would I were with you nowe, that I might change my voyce: for I am in doubt of you. 21 Tell me, ye that will vnder the Law, doe ye not heare the Lawe? 22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, one by a seruant, and one by a free woman. 23 But he which was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh: and he which was of the free woman, was borne by promise. 24 By the which things another thing is meant: for these mothers are the two testaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage. 25 (For Agar or Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answereth to Hierusalem which nowe is) and she is in bondage with her children. 26 But Hierusalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all. 27 For it is written, Rejoyce thou barren that bearest no children: breake forth, and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many moe children, then she which hath an husband. 28 Therefore, brethren, wee are after the maner of Isaac, children of the promise. 29 But as then hee that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the Spirit, euens so it is nowe. 30 But what sayth the Scripture? Put out the seruant and her sonne: for the sonne of the seruant shall not be heire with the sonne of the free woman. 31 Then brethren, we are not children of the seruant, but of the free woman.

5

1 Stand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and be not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage. 2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if yee be circumcised, Christ shall profite you nothing. 3 For I testifie againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe. 4 Ye are abolished from Christ: whosoever are iustified by the Law, ye are fallen from grace. 5 For we through the Spirit waite for the hope of righ- teousnes through faith. 6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcission availeth any thing, neither vn circumcision, but faith which worketh by loue. 7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that ye did not obey the trueth? 8 It is not the perswasion of him that calleth you. 9 A little leauen doeth leaue the whole lumpe. 10 I haue trust in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: but hee that troubleth you, shall beare his condemnation, whosoever he be. 11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumsicion, why doe I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of the crosse abolished. 12 Would to God they were euens cut off, which doe disquiet you. 13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto libertie: onely vse not your libertie as an occasion vnto the flesh, but by loue serue one another. 14 For all the Lawe is fulfilled in one worde, which is this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. 15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heede least ye be consumed one of another. 16 Then I say, Walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fullfill the lustes of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary one to another, so that ye can not doe the same things that ye would. 18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Lawe. 19 Moreouer the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are adulterie,
fornication, vnclenes, wantonnes, 
10 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate, emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, heresies, 21 Enuie, murmurs, drunkenesse, gluttonie, and such like, whereof I tell you before, as I also haue tolde you before, that they which doe such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God. 22 But the fruite of the Spirit is love, ioye, peace, long suffering, gentlenes, goodnes, Fayth, 23 Meekenesse, temperancie: against such there is no lawe. 24 For they that are Christes, haue crucified the flesh with the affections and lustes. 25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit. 26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glorie, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

6

1 Brethren, if a man be suddenly taken in any offence, ye which are spiritual, restore such one with the spirit of meekenes, considering thy selfe, least thou also be tempted. 2 Beare ye one anothers burden, and so fulfill the Lawe of Christ. 3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, hee deceiteth himselfe in his imagination. 4 But let euery man prooue his owne worke: and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe oneley and not in another. 5 For euery man shall beare his owne burden. 6 Let him that is taught in the worde, make him that hath taught him, partaker of all his goods. 7 Be not deceived: God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall hee also reap. 8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but hee that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reap life euerlasting. 9 Let vs not therefore be weary of well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. 10 While we haue therefore time, let vs doe good vnto all men, but specially vnto them, which are of the housholde of faith. 11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand. 12 As many as desire to make a faire shewe in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised, onely because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ. 13 For they themselves which are circumcised keepe not the law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh. 14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in ye crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto me, and I vnto ye world. 15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor vn circumcision, but a newe creature. 16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace shalbe vpon them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel of God. 17 From henceforth let no man put me to busines: for I beare in my body the marks of the Lord Iesus. 18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit, Amen. ‘Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.’
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE EPHESIANS

1. Pavl an Apostle of Jesvs Christ by the will of God, to the Saints, which are at Ephesus, and to ye faithfull in Christ Iesvs: 2. Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesvs Christ. 3. Blessed be God, and the Father of our Lord Iesvs Christ, which hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessing in heauenly thinges in Christ, 4. As hee hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the worlde, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in loue: 5. Who hath predestinate vs, to be adopted through Iesvs Christ in him selue, according to the good pleasure of his will, 6. To the prayse of the glory of his grace, wherewith he hath made vs freely accepted in his beloved, 7. By whom we haue redemption through his blood, euens the forgiueness of sinnes, according to his rich grace: 8. Whereby he hath bene abundant toward vs in all wisedome and vnderstanding, 9. And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him, 10. That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, he might gather together in one all things, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, euens in Christ: 11. In whom also we are chosen when we were predestinate according to ye purpose of him, which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will, 12. That we, which first trusted in Christ, should be vnto the praise of his glorie: 13. In whom also ye haue trusted, after that ye heard the worde of trueth, euens the Gospel of your saluation, wherein also after that ye beleued, ye were sealed with the holy Spiri te of promise, 14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto the prayse of his glory. 15. Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the Lord Iesvs, and loue toward all the Saints, 16. I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers, 17. That the God of our Lord Iesvs Christ, that Father of glory, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisedome, and revelation through the acknowledging of him, 18. That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightened, that ye may knowe what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance is in the Saints, 19. And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which beleue, according to the working of his mightie power, 20. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenly places, 21. Farre aboue al principalitie, and power, and might, and domination, and euery Name, that is named, not in this world only, but also in that that is to come, 22. And hath made all things subject vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things to be the head to the Church, 23. Which is his body, euens the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all things.

2. 1. And you hath he quickened, that were dead in trespasses and sinnes, 2. Wherein, in times past ye walked, according to the course of this world, and after the prince that ruleth in the aire, euens the spirtue, that nowe worketh in the children of disobedience, 3. Among whom we also had our conversation in time past, in the lustes of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others. 4. But God which is rich in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs, 5. Even when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickened vs together in Christ, by whose grace ye are saued, 6. And hath
Ephesians 2:7

7 For this cause, I Paul am the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

Ephesians 3:18

1 For this cause, I Paul am the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, 2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you warde. 3 That is, that God by revelation hath shewed this mystery vnto me (as I wrote above in few words, 4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may knowe mine understanding in the mysterie of Christ) 5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is nowe reuiled vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit, 6 That the Gentiles should be inheriters also, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel, 7 Whereof I am made a minister by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me through the effectuall working of his power. 8 Even vnto me the least of all Saints is this grace giuen, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ. 9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowship of the mysterie is, which from the beginning of the world hath bene hid in God, who hath created all things by Jesus Christ, 10 To the intent, that nowe vnto principalities and powers in heauenly places, might be knowne by the Church the manifolde wisedome of God, 11 According to the eternall purpose, which he wrought in Christ Jesus our Lord: 12 By whom we haue boldenes and entrance with confidence, by faith in him. 13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glory. 14 For this cause I bowe my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 (Of whom is named the whole familie in heauen and in earth) 16 That he might graunte you according to the riches of his glorie, that ye may be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man, 17 That Christ may dwell in your heartes by faith: 18 That ye, being rooted and grounded in loue, may be able to comprehend with al Saints,
what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height: 19 And to knowe the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled with all fulnesse of God. 20 Vnto him therefore that is able to do exceeding aboundantly above all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs, 21 Be praise in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

4
1 I therefore, being prisoner in the Lord, praine you that yee walke worthy of the vocation whereunto yee are called, 2 With all humblenesse of minde, and meekenesse, with long suffering, supporting one an other through loue, 3 Endeavouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4 There is one body, and one Spirit, even as yee are called in one hope of your vocation. 5 There is one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme, 6 One God and Father of all, which is aboue all, and through all, and in you all. 7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. 8 Wherfore he saith, Whe he ascended vp on hie, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men. 9 (Nowe, in that hee ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest partes of the earth? 10 Hee that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue all heauens, that hee might fill all things) 11 Hee therefore gaue some to be Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, and some Pastours, and Teachers, 12 For the repairing of the Saintes, for the woorker of the ministerie, and for the edification of the bodie of Christ, 13 Till we all meete together (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfite man, and vnto the measure of the age of the fulnesse of Christ, 14 That we henceforth be no more children, wauering and caried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the deceit of men, and with craftines, whereby they lay in wait to deceiue. 15 But let vs folowe the truth in loue, and in all things, grow vp into him, which is the head, that is, Christ. 16 By whome al the body being coupled and knit together by euery ioynt, for ye furniture therof (according to the effectual power, which is in the measure of euery part) receiuenth increase of the body, vnto the edifying of itselue in loue. 17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that yee henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke, in vanitie of their minde, 18 Hauing their understanding darkened, and being strangers from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardnesse of their heart: 19 Which being past feeling, haue giuen themselues vnto wantonnesse, to worooke all vncleanness, euuen with griedinesse. 20 But yee haue not so learned Christ, 21 If so be yee haue heard him, and haue bene taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus, 22 That is, that yee cast off, concerning the conversation in time past, that olde man, which is corrupt through the deceiueable lustes, 23 And be renued in the spirit of your minde, 24 And put on ye new man, which after God is created vnto righteousness, and true holines. 25 Wherefore cast off lying, and speake euery man truth vnto his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26 Bee angrie, but sinne not: let not the sunne goe downe vpyn your wrath, 27 Neither giue place to the deuill. 28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, and worke with his handes the thing which is good, that hee may haue to giue vnto him that needeth. 29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouths: but that which is good, to ye vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers. 30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whom ye are sealed vnto ye day of redemption.
31 Let all bitterness, and anger, and wrath, crying, and euill speaking be put away from you, with all maliciousnesse. 32 Be ye courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely forgiving one another, even as God for Christes sake, freely forgae you.

5 1 Bee yee therefore followers of God, as deare children, 2 And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, to be an offering and a sacrifice of a sweete smelling saour to God. 3 But fornication, and all vnclannesse, or coutousnesse, let it not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saints, 4 Neither filthinesse, neither foolish talking, neither jesting, which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thankes. 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, neither vnclane person, nor coutous person, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God. 6 Let no man deceuie you with yow worde: for, for such thinges commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not therefore companions with them. 8 For ye were once darkenesse, but are nowe light in the Lord: walke as children of light, 9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in al goodness, and righteounes, and truth) 10 Approving that which is pleasing to the Lord. 11 And haue no fellowship with ye vnfruitfull works of darknes, but euene reprouue them rather. 12 For it is shame euene to speake of the things which are done of them in secret. 13 But all things when they are reprooue of the light, are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest. 14 Wherefore hee sayeth, Awake thou that sleepest, and stande vp from the deade, and Christ shall giue thee light. 15 Take heede therefore that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise, 16 Redeeming ye season: for ye daies are euill. 17 Wherefore, be ye not vnwise, but vnderstand what the will of the Lord is. 18 And be not drunke with wine, wherein is excesse: but be fulfilled with the Spirit, 19 Speaking vnto your selues in psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing, and making melodie to the Lord in your hearts, 20 Givyng thankes alwayes for all thinges vnto God euene the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, 21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God. 22 Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as vnto the Lord. 23 For the husband is the wiues head, euene as Christ is the head of the Church, and the same is the sauior of his body. 24 Therfore as the Church is in subjection to Christ, euene so let the wiues be to their husbands in euery thing. 25 Husbands, loue your wiues, euene as Christ loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it, 26 That hee might sanctifie it, and clense it by the washing of water through the worde, 27 That hee might make it vnto him selue a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it shoulde bee holy and without blame. 28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth him selue. 29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euene as the Lord doeth the Church. 30 For we are members of his bodie, of his flesh, and of his bones. 31 For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shall cleaue to his wife, and they twaine shalbe one flesh. 32 This is a great secrete, but I speake concerning Christ, and concerning the Church. 33 Therefore euery one of you, doe ye so: let euery one loue his wife, euene as himselfe, and let the wife see that shee feare her husband.

6 1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. 2 Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promise)
3 That it may be well with thee, and that thou mayst live long on earth.  
4 And ye, fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord.  
5 Servants, be obedient vnto them that are your masters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling in singlenesse of your hearts as vnto Christ,  
6 Not with seruice to the eye, as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart,  
7 With good will, seruing the Lord, and not men.  
8 And knowe ye that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, that same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.  
9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, putting away threatening: and know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of person with him.  
10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.  
11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaults of the deuil.  
12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, and against the worldly gouernours, the princes of the darkenesse of this worlde, against spirituall wickednesse, which are in ye hie places.  
13 For this cause take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euill day, and hauing finished all things, stand fast.  
14 Stand therefore, and your loynes girded about with veritie, and hauing on the brest plate of righ- teousnesse,  
15 And your feete shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.  
16 Aboue all, take the shielde of faith, wherewith ye may quench all the fierie dartes of the wicked,  
17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the worde of God.  
18 And pray alwayes with all maner prayer and supplication in the Spirit: and watch thereunto with all perseuerance and supplication for al Saints,  
19 And for me, that ytterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to publish the secret of the Gospel,  
20 Whereof I am the ambassadour in bonds, that therein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.  
21 But that ye may also know mine affaires, and what I doe, Tychicus my deare brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall shewe you of all things,  
22 Whom I have sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye might knowe mine affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.  
23 Peace be with the brethren, and loue with faith from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.  
24 Grace be with all them which loue our Lord Iesus Christ, to their immortalitie, Amen. ‘Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians, and sent by Tychicus.’
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
THE APOSTLE TO THE
PHILOPPANS

1 Paul and Timotheus the seruants of IESVS CHRIST, to all the
Saintes in Christ Iesus which are at Philippi, with the Bishops, and Dea-
cons: 2 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the
Lord Iesus Christ. 3 I thanke my God, hauing you in perfect memorie,
(Alwayes in all my praires for all you, praying with gladnesse) 5 Because of
the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel, from the first day vnto nowe.
6 And I am persuaded of this same thing, that he that hath begunne this
good worke in you, wil perfourme it vntill the day of Iesus Christ, 7 As it
becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because I haue you in remem-
brance that both in my bands, and in my defence, and confirmation of
the Gospell you all were partakers of my grace. 8 For God is my recorde,
howe I long after you all from the very heart roote in Iesus Christ. 9 And this
I pray, that your loue may abund, yet more and more in knowledge,
and in all judgement, 10 That ye may alowe those things which are best,
that ye may be pure, and without off-
ence vntill the day of Christ, 11 Filled
with the fruites of righteousnesse, which are by Iesus Christ vnto the
glorie and praise of God. 12 I would
ye vnderstood, brethren, that the
things which haue come vnto me,
are turned rather to the furthering
of the Gospell, 13 So that my bandes
in Christ are famous throughout all
the judgement hall, and in all other
places, 14 In so much that many of
the brethren in the Lord are boldened
through my bandes, and dare more
frankely speake the word. 15 Some
preache. Christ euen through enuie
and strife, and some also of good will.
16 The one part preacheth Christ of
contention and not purely, suppos-
ing to adde more affliction to my
bandes. 17 But the others of loue,
knowing that I am set for the defence
of the Gospell. 18 What then? yet
Christ is preached all maner wayes,
whether it be vnder a pretence, or
sycrere: and I therein ioye: yea and
will ioye. 19 For I knowe that this
shall turne to my saluation through
your prayer, and by the helpe of the
Spirit of Iesus Christ, 20 As I feruently
looke for, and hope, that in noth-
ing I shalbe ashamed, but that with
all confidence, as alwayes, so nowe
Christ shalbe magnified in my body,
whether it be by life or by death.
21 For Christ is to me both in life, and
in death aduantage. 22 And whether
to liue in the fleshe were profitable
for me, and what to chuse I knowe
not. 23 For I am distressed betweene
both, desiring to be losed and to
be with Christ, which is best of all.
24 Neuerthelesse, to abide in the fleshe,
is more needefull for you. 25 And this
am I sure of, that I shall abide, and
with you all continue, for your fur-
therance and ioy of your faith, 26 That
ye may more abondantly reioyce in
IESVS CHRIST for me, by my com-
ing to you againe. 27 Onely let your
conuersation be, as it becommeth the
Gospel of Christ, that whether I come
and see you, or els be absent, I may
heare of your matters that ye con-
tinue in one Spirit, and in one mind,
fighting together through the faith of
the Gospell. 28 And in nothing feare
your adversaries, which is to them
a token of perdition, and to you of
saluation, and that of God. 29 For vnto
you it is giuen for Christ, that not
onely ye should beleue in him, but
also suffer for his sake, 30 Hauing the
same fight, which ye sawe in me, and
nowe heare to be in me.

2

1 If there be therfore any consola-
tion in Christ, if any comfort of loue,
if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any
compassion and mercie, 2 Fulfill my ioye, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, and of one judgement, 3 That nothing be done through contention or vaine glory, but that in meekenesse of minde every man esteeme other better then himselfe. 4 Looke not every man on his owne things, but every man also on the things of other men. 5 Let the same minde be in you that was euen in Christ Iesus, 6 Who being in ye forme of God, thought it no robbarie to be equall with God: 7 But he made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke on him ye forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, and was founde in shape as a man. 8 He humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Crosse. 9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue every name, 10 That at the Name of Iesus shoulde euyer knee bowe, both of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth, 11 And that euyer tongue shoulde confess that Iesus Christ is the Lord, vnto the glory of God the Father. 12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alaways obeyed me, not as in my presence only, but now much more in mine absence, so make an end of your owne saluation with feare and trembling. 13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the deede, euen of his good pleasure. 14 Do all things without murmuring and reasonings, 15 That ye may be blamelesse, and pure, and the sonnes of God without rebuke in the middes of a naughtie and crooked nation, among whom yee shine as lights in the world, 16 Holding forth the worde of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine. 17 Yea, and though I bee offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and seruice of your faith, I am glad, and reioyce with you all. 18 For the same cause also be ye glad, and reioyce with me. 19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to sende Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I knowe your state. 20 For I haue no man like minded, who will faithfully care for your matters. 21 For all seeke their owne, and not that which is Iesus Christes. 22 But yee knowe the proove of him, that as a sonne with the father, hee hath serued with me in the Gospel. 23 Him therefore I hope to send assoone as I knowe howe it will goe with me, 24 And trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly. 25 But I supposed it necessarie to sende my brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my companion in labour, and fellowe souldier, euen your messenger, and he that ministred vnto me such things as I wanted. 26 For he longed after all you, and was full of heauinesse, because yee had heard that hee had beene sicke. 27 And no doubt he was sicke, very neere vnto death: but God had mercie on him, and not on him onely, but on me also, least I should haue sorowe vpon sorowe. 28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when yee shoulde see him againe, yee might reioyce, and I might be the lesse sorowfull. 29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and make much of such: 30 Because that for the worooke of Christ he was neere vnto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that seruice which was lacking on your part toward me.

3 1 Moreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieueth mee not to write the same things to you, and for you it is a sure thing. 2 Beware of dogges: beware of euil workers: beware of the concision. 3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirite, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh: 4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, much
more I. 6 Circumsised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Ebrewe of the Ebrewes, by the Lawe a Pharise. 7 Concerning zeal, I persecuted ye Church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, I was vnrebukeable. 8 Yea, doubtlesse I thinke all things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whome I haue counted all things losse, and doe judge them to bee dongue, that I might winne Christ, 9 And might bee founde in him, that is, not hauing mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Lawe, but that which is through the faith of Christ, euen the righteousnesse which is of God through faith, 10 That I may know him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death, 11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead: 12 Not as though I had alreadie attained to it, either were alreadie perfect: but I follow, if that I may comprehend that for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus. 13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained to it, but one thing I doe: I forget that which is behinde, and endeouer my selfe vnto that which is before, 14 And follow hard toward the marke, for the prise of the hie calling of God in Christ Iesus. 15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if yee be otherwise minded, God shall reuieile euens the same vnto you. 16 Neuerthelesse, in that whereunto wee are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that wee may minde one thing. 17 Brethren, bee followers of mee, and looke on them, which walke so, as yee haue vs for an ensample. 18 For many walke, of whom I haue told you often, and nowe tell you weeping, that they are the enemies of the Crosse of Christ: 19 Whose ende is damnation, whose God is their bellie, and whose glorie is to their shame, which minde earthly things. 20 But our conversacion is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the Saviour, euens the Lord Iesus Christ, 21 Who shall change our vile bodie, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby hee is able euens to subdue all things vnto him selfe.

4

1 Therefore, my brethre, beloued and longed for, my ioy and my crowne, so continue in the Lord, yee beloued. 2 I pray Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of one accord in the Lord. 3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, helpe those women, which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellowe labourers, whose names are in the boke of life. 4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I say, reioyce. 5 Let your patient minde be knowne vnto all men. The Lord is at hand. 6 Be nothing carefull, but in all things let your requestes be shewed vnto God in praiyer, and supplication with giuing of thanks. 7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall preserue your heartes and mindes in Christ Iesus. 8 Furthermore, brethre, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer things are honest, whatsoeuer things are iust, whatsoeuer things are pure, whatsoeuer things are worthie loue, whatsoeuer things are of good report, if there be any vertue, or if there be any praise, thinke on these things, 9 Which yee haue both learned and receiued, and heard, and seene in mee: those things doe, and the God of peace shalbe with you. 10 Nowe I reioyce also in the Lord greatly, that nowe at the last your care for mee springeth afresh, wherein notwithstanding ye were careful, but yee lacked opportunitie. 11 I speake not because of
want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. 12 And I can be abased, and I can abound: every where in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungrie, and to abound, and to have want. 13 I am able to do all things through the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me. 14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate to mine affliction. 15 And ye Philippians know also that in the beginning of the Gospell, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely. 16 For euén when I was in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and afterward againe for my necessitie, 17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire the fruit which may further your reckoning. 18 Now I have receiued all, and have plentie: I was euén filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which came from you, an odour that smellleth sweete, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God. 19 And my God shall fulfill all your necessities through his riches with glorie in Iesus Christ. 20 Unto God euén our Father be praise for euermore, Amen. 21 Salute all the Saintes in Christ Iesus. The brethren, which are with me, greete you. 22 All the Saintes salute you, and most of all they which are of Cesars houshold. 23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all, Amen. ‘Written to the Philippians from Rome, and sent by Epaphroditus.’
1 Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother, 2 To them which are at Colosse, Saintes and faithfull brethren in Christ: Grace bee with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ. 3 We giue thanks to God euen ye Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, alway praying for you: 4 Since wee heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of your loue toward all Saintes, 5 For the hopes sake, which is laide vp for you in heauen, whereof yee haue heard before by the word of trueth, which is the Gospel, 6 Which is come vnto you, eue as it is vnto al the world, and is fruitful, as it is also amog you, from ye day that ye heard and truely knew ye grace of God, 7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellowe seruaunt, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ: 8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit. 9 For this cause wee also, since the day wee heard of it, cease not to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will in all wisdome, and spirituall vnderstanding, 10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord, and please him in all things, being fruitefull in all good workes, and increasing in the knowledge of God, 11 Strengthened with all might through his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long sufferinge with joyfulnesse, 12 Giiuing thanks vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saintes in light, 13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of his deare Sonne, 14 In whome we haue redemption through his blood, that is, the forgueness of sinnes, 15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first begotten of euery creature. 16 For by him were all things created, which are in heauen, and which are in earth, thinges visible and inuisible: whether they be Thrones or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers, all thinges were created by him, and for him, 17 And hee is before all thinges, and in him all thinges consist. 18 And hee is the head of the body of the Church: he is the beginning, and the first begotten of the dead, that in all thinges hee might haue the preeminence. 19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell, 20 And through peace made by that blood of that his crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, through him, I say, all thinges, both which are in earth, and which are in heauen. 21 And you which were in times past strangers and enemies, because your mindes were set in euill workes, hath he nowe also reconciled, 22 In that body of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vnblameable and without fault in his sight, 23 If ye continue, grounded and stablished in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospel, whereof ye haue heard, and which hath bene preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am a minister. 24 Now rejoyce I in my suffrings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church, 25 Whereof I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen mee vnto you ward, to fulfill the word of God, 26 Which is the mysterie hid since the world began, and from all ages, but nowe is made manifest to his Saintes, 27 To whome God woulde make known what is the riches of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which riches is Christ in you, the hope of glory, 28 Whome we preache, admonishing euery man, and teaching euery man in all wisdome, that we may present
every man perfect in Christ Iesus,
29 Whereunto I also labour and strive, according to his working which worketh in me mightily.

2
1 For I woulde ye knewe what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh, 2 That their heartes might be comforted, and they knit together in loue, and in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to know the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of Christ: 3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome and knowledge. 4 And this I say, lest any man shoulde beguile you with entising wordes: 5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, rejoicing and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ. 6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke in him, 7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye haue bene taught, abunding therein with thankesgiuing. 8 Beware lest there be any man that spoile you through philosophie, and vaine deceit, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. 9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily. 10 And yee are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power. 11 In whome also yee are circumsised with circumcision made without handes, by putting off the sinfull body of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ, 12 In that yee are buried with him through baptism, in whome ye are also raised vp together through the faith of the operation of God, which raised him from the dead. 13 And you which were dead in sinnes, and in the vn circumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, fouging you all your trespasses, 14 And putting out the hand writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrarie to vs, hee euen tooke it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse, 15 And hath spoyled the Principalities, and Powers, and hath made a shew of them openly, and hath triumphed ouer them in the same crosse. 16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate and drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or of the newe moone, or of the Sabbath dayes, 17 Which are but a shadowe of thinges to come: but the body is in Christ. 18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you by humblenesse of minde, and worshipping of Angels, aduauncing himselfe in those thinges which hee neuer sawe, rashly put vp with his fleshly minde, 19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the body furnished and knit together by ioynetes and bands, increaseth with the increasing of God. 20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ordinances of the world, why, as though ye liued in ye world, are ye burdened with traditions? 21 As, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not. 22 Which al perish with the vsing, and are after the commandements and doctrines of men. 23 Which thinges haue in deede a shewe of wisdome, in voluntarie religion and humblenesse of minde, and in not sparing the body, which are thinges of no valewe, sith they perteine to the filling of the flesh.

3
1 If yee then bee risen with Christ, seeke those thinges which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God. 2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, and not on things which are on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. 4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory. 5 Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vnCLEANnesse,
Colossians 3:6

the inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnes which is idolatrie. 6 For the which things sake ye wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience. 7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye liued in them. 8 But now put ye away euen all these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, cursed speaking, filthie speaking, out of your mouth. 9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yee haue put off the olde man with his workes, 10 And haue put on the newe, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him, 11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iew, circumcision nor vn circumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: But Christ is all, and in all things. 12 Now therfore as the elect of God holy and beloved, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of minde, meekenesse, long suffering: 13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man haue a quarel to another: euen as Christ forgaue, euen so doe ye. 14 And aboue all these thinges put on loue, which is the bond of perfectnes. 15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which ye are called in one body, and be ye thankfull. 16 Let the worde of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all wisdome, teaching and admonishing your owne selues, in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with a grace in your hearts to the Lord. 17 And whatsoeuer ye shall doe, in worde or deede, doe all in the Name of the Lord Jesus, gluing thankes to God euen the Father by him. 18 Wiues, submit your selues vn to your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord. 19 Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter vn to them. 20 Children, obey your parents in all thing for that is well pleasing vn to the Lord. 21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, least they be discouraged. 22 Seruant, be obedient vn to them that are your masters according to the flesh, in all things, not with eye service as men pleasers, but in singleenes of heart, fearing God. 23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men, knowing that of the Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ. 24 But he that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

Colossians 4:13

1 Ye masters, doe vn to your seruants, that which is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen. 2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving, 3 Praying also for vs, that God may open vn to the doore of vtterance, to speake ye mysterie of Christ: wherefore I am also in bonds, 4 That I may vtter it, as it becommeth me to speake. 5 Walke wisely towards them that are without, and redeeme the season. 6 Let your speach be gracious alwayes, and powdred with salt, that ye may know how to answere euery man. 7 Tychicus our beloved brother and faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord, shall declare vn to you my whole state: 8 Whom I haue sent vn to you for the same purpose that he might know your state, and might comfort your hearts, 9 With Onesimus a faithfull and a beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall shew you of all things here. 10 Aristarchus my prison fellow saluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas cousin (touching whom ye receiued commandements. If he come vn to you, receiue him) 11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. These onely are my worke fellowes vn to the kingdom of God, which haue bene vn to my consolation. 12 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and alwayes striueth for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and full in all the will of God. 13 For
I beare him record, that he hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Hierapolis. 14 Luke the beloued physician greeteth you, and Demas. 15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house. 16 And when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it be read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and that ye likewise reade the Epistle written from Laodicea. 17 And say to Archippus, Take heede to the ministerie, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it. 18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bands. Grace be with you, Amen. 'Written from Rome to the Colossians, and sent by Tychicus, and Onesimus.'
THE FIRST EPISODE OF
PAUL THE APOSTLE TO
THE THESALONIANS

1 Pavl, and Siluanus, and Timo-
theus, vnto the Church of the Thes-
alonians, which is in God the Fa-
ther, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace be with you, and peace from
God our Father, and from the Lord
Jesus Christ. 2 We giue God thanks
always for you all, making mention
of you in our prayers 3 Without ceas-
ing, remembering your effectuall faith,
and diligent loue, and the patience of
your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ,
in the sight of God euen our Father,
4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye
are elect of God. 5 For our Gospell was
not vnto you in worde only, but also
in power, and in the holy Ghost, and
in much assurance, as ye know after
what maner we were among you for
your sakes. 6 And ye became followers
of vs, and of the Lord, and receiued
the worde in much affliction, with ioy
of the holy Ghost, 7 So that ye were
as ensamples to all that beleue in
Macedonia and in Achaia. 8 For from
you sounded out the worde of the
Lord, not in Macedonia and in Achaia
only: but your faith also which is
toward God, spred abroad in all quar-
ters, that we neede not to speake any
thing. 9 For they themselues shew of
vs what maner of entring in we had
vnto you, and how ye turned to God
from idoles, to serue the liuing and
ttrue God, 10 And to looke for his sonne
from heauen, whom he raised from
the dead, euen Jesus which deliuereth
vs from that wrath to come.

2 1 For ye your selues knowe,
brethren, that our entrance in vnto
you was not in vaine, 2 But euen after
that we had suffered before, and were
shamefully entreated at Philippi, (as
ye knowe) we were bolde in our God,
to speake vnto you the Gospell of

God with much striuing. 3 For our
exhortation was not by deceite, nor
by vnclenannes, nor by guile. 4 But
as we were allowed of God, that the
Gospel should be committed vnto vs,
so we speake, not as they that please
men, but God, which approoueth our
hearts. 5 Neither yet did we euer vse
flattering wordes, as ye knowe, nor
coloured couetousnes,God is recorde.
6 Neither sought we praye of men,
neither of you, nor of others, when
we might haue bene chargeable, as
the Apostles of Christ. 7 But we were
gentle among you, euen as a nourse
cherisht her children. 8 Thus being
affectioned toward you, our good
will was to haue dealt vnto you, not
the Gospel of God onely, but also
our owne soules, because ye were
deare vnto vs. 9 For ye remember,
brethren, our labour and trauaile: for
we laboured day and night, because
we would not be chargeable vnto any
of you, and preached vnto you the
Gospel of God. 10 Ye are witnesses,
and God also, how holily, and iustly,
and vnblameably we behaued our
selues among you that beleue. 11 As
ye knowe how that we exhorted you,
and comforted, and besought every
one of you (as a father his children)
12 That ye would walke worthy of
God, who hath called you vnto his
kingdome and glorie. 13 For this cause
also thanke we God without ceasing,
that when ye receiued the worde of
God, which ye heard of vs, ye receiued
it not as the worde of men, but as it is
in deede the worde of God, which also
worketh in you that beleue. 14 For
brethren, ye are become followers of
the Churches of God, which in
Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because
ye haue also suffred the same things
of your owne countrey men, euen
as they haue of the Iewes, 15 Who
both killed the Lord Iesus and their
owne Prophets, and haue persecuted
vs away, and God they please not,
and are contrary to all men, 16 And
forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles,
that they might be saued, to fulfill their sinnes alwayes: for the wrath of God is come on them, to the vтом. 17 For asmuch, brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to see your face with great desire. 18 Therefore we would haue come vnto you (I Paul, at least once or twice) but Satan hindered vs. 19 For what is our hope or ioye, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his comming? 20 Yea, ye are our glory and ioy.

3
1 Wherefore since we could no longer forbare, wee thought it good to remayne at Athens alone, 2 And haue sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our labour fellow in the Gospel of Christ, to stablish you, and to comfort you touching your faith, 3 That no man should be moued with these afflictions: for ye your selues knowe, that we are appointed thereunto. 4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe, and ye knowe it. 5 Euen for this cause, when I could no longer forbeare, I sent him that I might knowe of your faith, lest the tempter had tempted you in any sort, and that our labour had bene in vaine. 6 But now lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring to see vs, as we also do you, 7 Therefore, brethren, we had consolation in you, in all our affliction and necessitie through your faith. 8 For nowe are wee alieue, if ye stand fast in the Lord. 9 For what thankes can wee recompense to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith we reioyce for your sakes before our God, 10 Night and day, praying exceedingly that wee might see your face, and might accomplish that which is lacking in your faith? 11 Nowe God himselfe, euens our Father, and our Lord Iesus Christ, guide our iourney vnto you, 12 And the Lord increase you, and make you abound in loue one toward another, and toward all men, euens as we doe toward you: 13 To make your hearts stable and vnblameable in holines before God euens our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

4
1 And furthermore we beseeche you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Iesus, that ye increase more and more, as ye haue receiued of vs, how ye ought to walke, and to please God. 2 For ye knowe what commandements we gaue you by the Lord Iesus. 3 For this is the will of God euens your sanctification, and that ye should abstaine from fornication, 4 That euery one of you should know, how to possesse his vessell in holines and honour, 5 And not in the lust of concupiscence, euens as the Gentiles which know not God: 6 That no man oppresse or defraude his brother in any matter: for the Lord is auenger of all such things, as we also haue tolde you before time, and testified. 7 For God hath not called vs vnto uncleannesse, but vnto holinesse. 8 Hee therefore that despiseth these things, despiseth not man, but God who hath euens giuen you his holy Spirit. 9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye neede not that I write vnto you: for ye are taught of God to loue one another. 10 Yea, and that thing verily yee doe vnto all the brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more, 11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to meddle with your owne busines, and to worke with your owne handes, as we commanded you, 12 That yee may behaue your selues
honestly toarde them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you. 13 I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are a sleepe, that ye sorow not even as other which haue no hope. 14 For if we beleue that Iesus is dead, and is risen, even so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him. 15 For this saie we vnto you by the worde of the Lord, that we liue, and are remaying in the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent which sleepe. 16 For the Lord himselfe shall descende from heauen with a shoute, and with the voyce of the Archangel, and with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: 17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the clouds, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord. 18 Wherefore, comfort your selues one another with these wordes.

5

1 Bvt of the times and seasons, brethren, yee haue no neede that I write vnto you. 2 For ye your selues knowe perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, even as a thiefe in the night. 3 For when they shall say, Peace, and safetie, then shall come vpon them sudden destruction, as the traualie vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape, 4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenes, that that day shall come on you, as it were a thiefe. 5 Yee are all the chil- dren of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenesse. 6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as do other, but let vs watch and be sober. 7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night. 8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast plate of faith and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helmet. 9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ, 10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him. 11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye doe. 12 Nowe we beseeche you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you, 13 That yee haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Bee at peace among your selues. 14 We desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort ye feeble minded: beare with the weake: be pacient toward all men. 15 See that none recompense euil for euil vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good, both toward your selues, and toward all men. 16 Rejoyce eu- ermore. 17 Pray continually. 18 In all things glie thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus toward you. 19 Quench not the Spirit. 20 Despise not prophecyng. 21 Try all things, and keepe that which is good. 22 Absteine from all appearance of euill. 23 Nowe the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and I pray God that your whole spirite and soule and body, may be kept blamelesse vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ. 24 Faithfull is hee which calleth you, which will also doe it. 25 Brethren, pray for vs. 26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse. 27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saintes. 28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you, Amen. 'The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians written from Athens.'
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS

1 Paul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, which is in God our Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: 2 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ. 3 We ought to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the loue of euerie one of you toward another, aboundeth. 4 So that we our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulatios that ye suffer, 5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer. 6 For it is a righ-teous thing with God, to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you, 7 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs, when the Lord Iesus shall shewe himselfe from heauen with his mightie Angels, 8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that doe not know God, and which obey not vnto the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ, 9 Which shall be punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power, 10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to be made marueilous in all them that beleevue (because our testimonie toward you was beleeved) in that day. 11 Wherefore, we also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnes, and the worke of faith with power, 12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

1 Nowe we beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him, 2 That ye be not suddenly moued from your minde, nor troubled neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as it were from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand. 3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for that day shall not come, except there come a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, euens the sonne of perdition, 4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth him selfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doeth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing him selfe that he is God. 5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things? 6 And nowe ye knowe what withold-eth that he might be reuseiled in his time. 7 For the mysterie of inquitie doeth already worke: onely he which nowe withholdeth, shall let till he be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked man be reuseiled, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of his mouth, and shall abolish with the brightnes of his com-ming. 9 Euen him whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders, 10 And in al deceuables of vnrighteousnes, among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued. 11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleevue lies, 12 That all they might be damned which beleevued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vn-righteousnes. 13 But we ought to give thankes alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and the faith of trueth, 14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to obtaine the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.
15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast and keepe the instructions, which ye haue bene taught, either by worde, or by our Epistle. 16 Now the same Iesus Christ our Lord; and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation and good hope through grace, 17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery word and good worke.

3

1 Furthermore, brethren, pray for vs, that the worde of the Lord may haue free passage and be glorified, euens as it is with you, 2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable and euill men: for all men haue not fayth. 3 But the Lord is faithfull, which wil stablish you, and keepe you from euill. 4 And we are perswaded of you through the Lord, that ye both doe, and will doe the things which we warne you of. 5 And the Lord guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ. 6 We warne you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye withdrawe your selues from euery brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the instruction, which hee receiued of vs. 7 For ye your selues know, how ye ought to follow vs: for we behaued not our selues inordinately among you, 8 Neither tooke we bread of any man for nought: but we wrought with labour and travaile night and day, because we would not be chargeable to any of you. 9 Not because we haue not authoritie, but that we might make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs. 10 For euens when we were with you, this we warned you of, that if there were any, which would not worke, that he should not eate. 11 For we heare, that there are some which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie bodies. 12 Therefore them that are such, we warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietenes, and eate their owne bread. 13 And ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing. 14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed: 15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother. 16 Now the Lord himselfe of peace giue you peace alwayes by all meanes. The Lord be with you all. 17 The salutation of me Paul, with mine owne hand, which is ye token in euery Epistle: so I write, 18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all, Amen. ‘The second Epistle to the Thessalonians, written from Athens.’
THE FIRST EPISTLE OF
PAUL THE APOSTLE TO
TIMOTHY

1 Pavl an Apostle of Iesvs Christ, by the commandement of God our Saviour, and of our Lord Iesvs Christ our hope, 2 Vnto Timotheus my natural sonne in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and from Christ Iesvs our Lord. 3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, so doe, that thou mayest warne some, that they teach none other doctrine, 4 Neither that they glue heede to fables and genealogies which are endless, which breed questions rather then godly edifying which is by faith. 5 For the end of the commandement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained. 6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling. 7 They would be doctours of the Law, and yet vnderstande not what they speake, neither whereof they affirme. 8 And we knowe, that the Law is good, if a man use it lawfully. 9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawles and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholie, and to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers, 10 To whoremongers, to burgerers, to menstealers, to lyers, to the periured, and if there be any other thing, that is contrary to wholesome doctrine, 11 Which is according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me. 12 Therefore I thanke him, which hath made me strong, that is, Christ Iesus our Lord: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in his service: 13 When before I was a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and an oppresser: but I was received to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe. 14 But the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus. 15 This is a true saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued, that Christ Iesus came into the worlde to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe. 16 Notwithstanding, for this cause was I receiued to mercie, that Iesvs Christ should first shewe on me all long suffering vnto the ensample of them, which shall in time to come beleue in him vnto eternall life. 17 Nowe vnto the King everlasting, immortall, invisible, vnto God onely wise, be honour and glory, for euer, and euer, Amen. 18 This commandement commit I vnto thee, sonne Timotheus, according to the prophecies, which went before vpon thee, that thou by them shouldest fight a good fight, 19 Hauing faith and a good conscience, which some haue put away, and as concerning faith, haue made shipwrecke. 20 Of whom is Hymeneus, and Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blaspheme.

2

1 I Exhort therefore, that first of all supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men, 2 For Kings, and for all that are in authoritie, that we may leade a quiet and a peaceable life, in all godlinesse and honestie. 3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour, 4 Who will that all men shalbe saued, and come vnto the acknowledging of the trueth. 5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and man, which is the man Christ Iesus, 6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all men, to be that testimonie in due time, 7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) even a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie. 8 I will therefore that the men pray, every where lifting vp pure hands without wrath, or doting. 9 Likewise also the women, that
they array themselves in comely apparel, with shamefastnes and modestie, not with broyded heare, or gold, or pearles, or costly apparell. But (as becommeth women that profess the feare of God) with good workes. Let the woman learne in silence with all subjection. I permit not a woman to teache, neither to usurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed, then Eue. And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman was deceived, and was in the transgression. Notwithstanding, through bearing of children she shalbe saued if they continue in faith, and loue, and holiness with modestie.

3

This is a true saying, If any man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthie worke. A Bishop therefore must be unreproueable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harberous, apt to teache, Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not coutous. One that can rule his owne house honestly, hauing children vnder obedience with all honestie. For if any cannot rule his owne house, how shall he care for the Church of God? He may not be a yong scholer, lest he being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill. He must also be well reported of, euen of them which are without, lest he fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill. Likewise must Deacons be grave, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthy lucre, hauing the mysterie of the faith in pure conscience. And let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be found blameles. Likewise their wiues must be honest, not euill speakers, but sober, and faithfull in all things. Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, and such as can rule their children well, and their owne househoudes. For they that haue ministred well, get them selues a good degree, and great libertie in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus. These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee. But if I tary long, that thou maist yet know, how thou oughtest to behaue thy self in ye house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of truth.

4

Now the Spirit speaketh evidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heede vnto spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils. Which speake lies through hypocrisie, and haue their cosciences burned with an hot yron, Forbidding to marrie, and commanding to abstaine from meates which God hath created to be receiued with giuing thankes of them which beleue and knowe the truth. For euery creature of God is good, and nothing ought to be refused, if it be receiued with thankesgiuing. For it is sanctified by the worde of God, and prayer. If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, which hast bene nourished vp in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed. But cast away prophane, and olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selue vnto godlinesse. For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promise of the life present, and of that that is to come. This is a true saying, and by all meanes worthie to be receiued. For therefore we labour and are rebuked, because we trust in
the liviug God, which is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that beleue. 11 These things warne and teache. 12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be vnnto them that beleuee, an ensample, in worde, in concussera-

tion, in loue, in spirit, in faith, and in purenesse. 13 Till I come, giue at-
tendance to reading, to exhortation, and to doctrine. 14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophecie with the laying on of the hands of the companie of the Eldership. 15 These things exercise, and giue thy selte vnnto them, that it may be seene howe thou profitest among all men. 16 Take heed vnnto thy selfe, and vnnto learning; continue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

5

1 Rebuke not an Elder, but ex-
hort him as a father, and the yonger men as brethren, 2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters, with all purenesse. 3 Honour wid-

owes, which are widowes in deede. 4 But if any widowe haue children or nephewes, let them learne first to shewe godlinesse towards their owne house, and to recompense their kinred: for that is an honest thing and acceptable before God. 5 And shee that is a widowe in deede and left alone, trusteth in God, and con-
tinueth in supplications and praier night and day. 6 But shee that liueth in pleasure, is dead, while shee li-

ehath be any that prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his housholde, hee denieth the faith, and is worse then an infidell. 9 Let not a widow be taken into the number vnnder three score yeere olde, that hath beene the wife of one hus-

band, 10 And well reported of for good worke: if shee haue nourished her children, if shee haue lodged the strangers, if shee haue washed the

Saintes feete, if shee haue ministred vnnto them which were in aduersitie, if shee were continually giuen vnnto euer good worke. 11 But refuse the yonger widowes: for when they haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marrie, 12 Hauing damnation, because they haue broken the first faith. 13 And likewise also being idle they learne to goo about from house to house: yea, they are not onely ydle, but also pratlers and busi-
bodies, speaking things which are not comely. 14 I will therefore that the yonger women marie, and beare chil-
dren, and governe the house, and giue none occasion to the aduersary to speake euill. 15 For certaine are alreadie turned backe after Satan. 16If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnnto them, and let not the Church bee charged, that there may bee suffi-
cient for them that are widowes in deede. 17 The Elders that rule well, let them be had in double honour, specially they which labour in the worde and doctrine, 18 For the Scripture sayeth, Thou shalt not mousell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, The labourer is worthie of his wages. 19 Against an El-
der receiue none accusation, but vn-
der two or three witnesses. 20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare. 21 I charge thee before God and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou ob-
serue these thinges without preferring one to an other, and doe nothing partially. 22 Lay handes suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomakes sake, and thine often infirmities. 24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, and goe before vnnto judgement: but some mens folowe after. 25 Likewise also the good worke is manifest before hande, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.
6

1 Let as many seruaunts as are vnder the yoke, count their masters worthie of all honour, that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not euill spoken of. 2 And they which haue beleuing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather doe seruice, because they are faithfull, and beloved, and partakers of the benefite. These things teach and exhort. 3 If any man teach otherwise, and consenteth not to the wholesome wordes of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine, which is according to godlinesse, 4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about questions and strife of words, whereof commeth enuie, strife, railings, euill surprisings, 5 Frowarde disputations of men of corrupt mindes and destitute of ye trueth, which thinke that gaine is godlines: from such separate thy selfe. 6 But godlinesse is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath. 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and it is certaine, that we can carie nothing out. 8 Therefore when wee haue foode and raiment, let vs therewith be content. 9 For they that will be rich, fall into tentation and snares, and into many foolish and noysome lustes, which drowne men in perdition and destruction. 10 For the desire of money is the roote of all euill, which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith, and pearced themselues through with many sorowes. 11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousnesse, godlines, faith, loue, patience, and meekenes. 12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses. 13 I charge thee in the sight of God, who quickeneth all thinges, and before Iesus Christ, which vnder Pon-tius Pilate witnessed a good confession, 14 That thou keepe this comman-
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF
PAUL THE APOSTLE TO
TIMOTHY

1 Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Iesus, 2 To Timotheus my beloved sonne: Grace, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from Iesus Christ our Lord. 3 I thanke God, whom I serue from mine elders with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my praiers night and day, 4 Desiring to see thee, mindefull of thy teares, that I may be filled with joy: 5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and in thy mother Eunice, and am assured that it dwelleth in thee also. 6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance that thou stirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of mine hands. 7 For God hath not giuen to vs the Spirite of feare, but of power, and of loue, and of a sound minde. 8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lord, neither of me his prisoner: but be partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel, according to the power of God, 9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an holy calling, not according to our workes, but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen to vs through Christ Iesus before the world was, 10 But is nowe made manifest by that appearing of our Saviour Iesus Christ, who hath abolishe death, and hath brought life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospel. 11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. 12 For the which cause I also suffer these things, but I am not ashamed: for I knowe whom I haue beleued, and I am persuaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him against that day. 13 Keepe the true paterne of the wholesome wordes, which thou hast heard of me in faith and loue which is in Christ Iesus. 14 That worthie thing, which was committed to thee, keepe through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs. 15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be turned from me: of which sort are Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine, 17 But when he was at Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me. 18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercie with the Lord at that day, and in how many things he hath ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

2 1 Thou therefore, my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus. 2 And what things thou hast heard of me, by many witnesses, ye same deliuer to faithfull men, which shalbe able to teache other also. 3 Thou therefore suffer affliction as a good souldier of Iesus Christ. 4 No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, because he woulde please him that hath chosen him to be a souldier. 5 And if any man also striue for a Masterie, he is not crowned, except he striue as he ought to doe. 6 The husbandman must labour before he receiue the fruietes. 7 Consider what I say: and the Lord giue thee understanding in all things: 8 Remember that Iesus Christ, made of the seede of Dauid, was rayed againe from the dead according to my Gospel, 9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euill doer, even vnto bondes: but the worde of God is not bounde. 10 Therefore I suffer all things, for the elects sake, that they might also obtaine the salvation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glorie. 11 It is a true saying, For if we be dead together with him, we also shall liue together with him. 12 If we
suffer, we shall also reign together with him: if we deny him, he also will deny vs. 13 If we beleue not, yet abideth he faithfull: he cannot deny himselfe. 14 Of these things put them in remembrance, and protest before the Lord, that they striue not about worudes, which is to no profit, but to the perueriting of the hearers. 15 Studie to shewe thy selfe approved vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to be ashamed, diuiding the worde of trueth aright. 16 Stay prophane, and vaine babblings: for they shall encrease vnto more vn-godlinesse. 17 And their worde shall fret as a canker: of which sort is Hymeneus and Philetus, 18 Which as concerning ye trueth haue erred from the marke, saying that the resurrectiion is past alreadie, and do destroy the faith of certaine. 19 But the foundation of God remaineth sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his: and, Let euery one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie. 20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not onely vessels of gold and of siluer, but also of wood and of earth, and some for honour, and some vnto dishonour. 21 If any man therefore purge him selfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and prepared vnto euery good worke. 22 Flee also from the lustes of youth, and follow after righteousnes, faith, loue, and peace, with them that call on the Lord with pure heart, 23 And put away foolish and vnlearned questions, knowing that they indgerer strife. 24 But the seruant of ye Lord must not striue, but must be gentle toward all men, apt to teache, suffering the euill, 25 Instructing them with meekenesse that are contrary minded, prouing if God at any time will give them repentance, that they may acknowledge the trueth, 26 And come to amendement out of that snare of the deuil, of whom they are taken prisoners, to doe his will.

3

1 This knowe also, that in the last dayes shall come perilous times. 2 For men shalbe louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proud, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vthankefull, vnholy, 3 Without naturall affection, truce breakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are good, 4 Traitours, headie, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God, 5 Hauing a shewe of godliennesse, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from such. 6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and leade captiue simple women laden with sinnes, and led with diuers lustes, 7 Which women are euier learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the trueth. 8 And as Iannes and Iambres withstoode Moses, so doe these also resist the trueth, men of corrupt mindes, reproue concerning the faith. 9 But they shall preuaile no longer: for their madnesse shalbe euident vnto all men, as theirs also was. 10 But thou hast fully known my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, loue, patience, 11 Persecutions, and afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lystri, which persecutions I suffered: but from them all the Lord deliuered me. 12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution. 13 But the euill men and deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceived. 14 But continue thou in the thinges which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of who thou hast learned them: 15 And that thou hast known the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make the wise vnto saluation, through the faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 For the whole Scripture is giuen by inspiration of God, and is profitable to teache, to convuince, to correct, and to
instruct in righteousnesse, 17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

4

1 I charge thee therefore before God, and before the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall judge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdom, 2 Preach the worde: be instant, in season and out of season: improue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine. 3 For the time will come, when they will not suffer wholesome doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, shall after their owne lustes get them an heape of teachers, 4 And shall turne their eares from the truth, and shalbe giuen vnto fables. 5 But watch thou in all things: suffer aduersitie: doe the worke of an Euangelist: cause thy ministerie to be throughly liked of. 6 For I am nowe readie to be offered, and the time of my departing is at hand. 7 I haue fought a good fight, and haue finished my course: I haue kept the faith. 8 For hence foorth is laide vp for me the crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous judge shall giue me at that day: and not to me onely, but vnto all them also that loue that his appearing. 9 Make speede to come vnto me at once: 10 For Demas hath forsaken me, and hath embraced this present world, and is departed vnto Thessa-lonica. Crescens is gone to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia. 11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable vnto me to minister. 12 And Tychi-cus haue I sent to Ephesus. 13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpetus, when thou commest, bring with thee, and the booke, but specially the parchments. 14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done me much euill: the Lord rewarde him according to his workes. 15 Of whome be thou ware also: for he withstood our preaching sore. 16 At my first answering no man assisted me, but all forsooke me: I pray God, that it may not be laide to their charge. 17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully beleued, and that all the Gentiles should heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the lion. 18 And the Lord will deliuer me from euery euil worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whome be praise for euier and euier, Amen. 19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the householde of Onesiphorus. 20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Mile-tum sicke. 21 Make speede to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. 22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you, Amen. 'The second Epistle written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus, when Paul was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero.'
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
THE APOSTLE TO TITUS

1 Paul a seruaunt of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth, which is according vnto godlines, 2 Vnto the hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, hath promised before the world began: 3 But hath made his worde manifest in due time through the preaching, which is committed vnto me, according to the commandement of God our Sauiour: 4 To Titus my naturall sonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour. 5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remaine, and shouldest ordeine Elders in euery citie, as I appointed thee, 6 If any be vnreprouerable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient. 7 For a Bishop must bee vnreprouable, as Gods steward, not froward, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre. 8 But harberous, one that loueth goodnesse, wise, righteous, holy, temperate, 9 Holding fast that faithfull worde according to doctrine, that he also may bee able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, and conuince them that say against it. 10 For there are many disobedient and vaine talkers and deceivers of minde, chiefly they of the Circumcision, 11 Whose mouthes must bee stopped, which subueret whole houses, teaching things, which they ought not, for filthie lucres sake. 12 One of themselves, even one of their owne prophets said, The Cretians are alwaies liars, euill beastes, slowe bellyes. 13 This witnesse is true: wherefore conuince them sharply, that they may be sound in ye faith, 14 And not taking heede to Iewish fables and commandements of men, that turne away from the trueth. 15 Vnto the pure are all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, is nothing pure, but euen their mindes and consciences are defiled. 16 They professe that they know God, but by works they deny him, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

2 1 Bvt speake thou the things which become wholesome doctrine, 2 That the elder men be watchful, graue, teperate, sounde in the faith, in loue, and in patience: 3 The elder women likewise, that they be in such behauior as becommeth solenesse, not false accusers, not subject to much wine, but teachers of honest things. 4 That they may instruct the yong women to be sober minded, that they loue their husbands, that they loue their children, 5 That they be temperate, chaste, keeping at home, good and subject vnto their husbands, that the word of God be not euill spoken of. 6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they bee sober minded. 7 In all things shewe thy selfe an example of good workes with vnкорrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie. 8 And with the wholesome worde, which can not be condemned, that hee which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning you to speake euill of. 9 Let seruants be subject to their masters, and please them in al things, not answering again, 10 Neither pickers, but that they shew al good faithfulness, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things. 11 For that grace of God, that bringeth saluation vnto all men, hath appeared, 12 And teacheth vs that we should deny vngodlinesse and worldly lusts, and that we should liue soberly and righteously, and godly in this present world, 13 Looking for that blessed
hope, and appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, and of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, 14 Who gaue him selfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs to bee a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good worke. 15 These things speake, and exhort, and conuince with all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

3 1 Pvt them in remembrance that they bee subject to the Principalities and powers, and that they bee obedient, and ready to euery good worke, 2 That they speake euill of no man, that they be no fighters, but soft, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men. 3 For wee our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceived, seruing the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in maliciousnes and enuie, hatefull, and hating one another: 4 But when that bountifulnesse and that loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared, 5 Not by the workes of righteousness, which we had done, but according to his mercie he saued vs, by the washing of the newe birth, and the renewing of the holy Ghost, 6 Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauiour, 7 That we, being justified by his grace, should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life. 8 This is a true saying, and these things I will thou shouldest affirme, that they which haue beleued God, might be carefull to shewe forth good workes. These things are good and profitable vnto men. 9 But stay foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and brawlings about the Lawe: for they are vnprofitable and vaine. 10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twise admonition, 11 Knowing that hee that is such, is peruerted, and sinneth, being damned of his owne selfe. 12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to mee vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter. 13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Lawe, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that they lacke nothing. 14 And let ours also learne to shewe foorth good workes for necessary vses, that they be not vnfruitfull. 15 All that are with mee, salute thee. Greee them that loue vs in the faith. Grace bee with you all, Amen. To Titus, elect the first bishoppe of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.
THE EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO PHILEMON

1 Paul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and our brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friended, and fellowe helper. 2 And to our deare sister Apphia, and to Archippus our fellowe soildier, and to the Church that is in thine house: 3 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. 4 I giue thanks to my God, making mention alwaies of thee in my praiers, 5 (When I heare of thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and towarde all Saintes) 6 That the fellowship of thy faith may bee made effectuall, and that whatsoeuer good thing is in you through Christ Jesus, may be known. 7 For we haue great joy and consolation in thy loue, because by thee, brother, the Saintes bowels are comforted. 8 Wherefore, though I bee very bolde in Christ to commaund thee that which is conuenient, 9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen nowe a prisoner for Jesus Christ. 10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whome I haue begotten in my bondes, 11 Which in times past was to thee vnprofitable, but nowe profitable both to thee and to me, 12 Whome I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels, 13 Whom I woulde haue retaine with mee, that in thy steade he might haue ministred vnto me in the bondes of the Gospel. 14 But without thy minde woulde I doe nothing, that thy benefite should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly. 15 It may be that he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer, 16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, euen as a brother beloved, specially to me: howe much more then vnto thee, both in the flesh and in the

17 If therefore thou count our thinges common, receiue him as my selfe. 18 If he hath hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine accounts. 19 I Paul haue written this with mine owne hande: I will recompense it, albeit I doe not say to thee, that thou owest moreouer vnto me euen thine owne selfe. 20 Yea, brother, let mee obteine this pleasure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord. 21 Trusting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt do eue more then I say. 22 Moreouer also prepare mee lodging: for I trust through your prayers I shall be freely giuen vnto you. 23 There salute thee Epaphras my felowe prisoner in Christ Iesus, 24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke, my felowe helpers. 25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you spirit, Amen. 'Written from Rome to Philemon, and send by Onesimus a seruant.'
1 At sundry times and in divers manors God spake in the olde time to our fathers by the Propheteis: in these last dayes hee hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne, 2 Whom he hath made heire of al things, by whome also he made the worldes, 3 Who being the brightnes of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his person, and bearing vp all things by his mightie worde, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the highest places, 4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as hee hath obtained a more excellent Name then they, 5 For vnto which of the Angels saide he at any time, Thou art my Sonne, this day begete I thee? and againe, I will be his Father, and he shall be my Sonne? 6 And againe, when he bringeth in his first begotten Sonne into the worlde, hee saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him. 7 And of the Angels he saith, He maketh the spirites his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire. 8 But vnto the Sonne he saith, O God, thy throne is for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingsdome is a scepter of righteousnes. 9 Thou hast loued righteousnes and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, eue thy God, hath anointed thee with the oyle of gladnes aboue thy fellowes. 10 And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, and the heauens are the workes of thine handes. 11 They shall perish, but thou doest remaine: and they all shall waxe olde as doeth a garment. 12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile. 13 Vnto which also of the Angels saide he at any time, Sit at my right hand, til I make thine enemies thy footestooe? 14 Are they not al ministring spirites, sent forth to minister, for their sakes which shalbe heires of saluation?

2 Wherefore wee ought diligently to giue heede to the things which wee haue heard, lest at any time we runne out. 2 For if the worde spoken by Angels was stedfast, and euery transgression, and disobedience receiued a lust recompence of reward, 3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be preached by the Lord, and afterward was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him, 4 God bearing witnes thereto, both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will? 5 For he hath not put in subiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we speake. 6 But one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldest bee mindefull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou wouldest consider him? 7 Thou madest him a little inferior to ye Angels: thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and hast set him aboue the workes of thine hands. 8 Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete. And in that he hath put all things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that should not be subject vnto him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto him, 9 But we see Jesus crowned with glory and honour, which was made little inferior to the Angels, through the suffering of death, that by Gods grace he might taste death for all men. 10 For it became him, for whom are all these things, and by whom are all these things, seeing that hee brought many children vnto glory, that he should consecrate the Prince of their saluation through afflictions. 11 For he that sanctifieth, and they which
are sanctified, are all of one: wherefore he is not ashamed to call them brethren, 12 Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church will I sing praises to thee. 13 And againe, I will put my trust in him. And againe, Beholde, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me. 14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himselfe likewise tooke part with them, that hee might destroye through death, him that had the power of death, that is the deuil, 15 And that he might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time subject to bondage. 16 For he in no sort tooke on him the Angels nature, but hee tooke on him the seede of Abraham. 17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that hee might be mercifull, and a faithfull hie Priest in things concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people. 18 For in that he suffered, and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

3

1 Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocation, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession Christ Iesus: 2 Who was faithfull to him that hath appointed him, euen as Moses was in al his house. 3 For this man is counted worthy of more glory then Moses, inasmuch as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house. 4 For every house is builded of some man, and he that hath built all things, is God. 5 Now Moses verely was faithfull in all his house, as a seruant, for a witnesse of the things which should be spoken after. 6 But Christ is as the Sonne, over his owne house, whose house we are, if we holde fast that confidence and that reioycing of that hope vnto the ende. 7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost sayth, To day if ye shall heare his voyce, 8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, according to the day of the tentation in the wildernes, 9 Where your fathers tempted me, provoued me, and sawe my workes fourtie yeeres long. 10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and sayde, They erre euer in their heart, neither haue they known my ways. 11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest. 12 Take heede, brethren, least at any time there be in any of you an euill heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the liuing God. 13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called to day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitulnes of sinne. 14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe sure vnto the ende that beginning, wherewith we are vpholden, 15 So long as it is sayd, To day if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation. 16 For some when they heard, provoked him to anger: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses. 17 But with whome was he displeased fourtie yeeres? Was hee not displeased with them that sinned, whose carkeises fell in the wildernes? 18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them that obeyed not? 19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbelieve.

4

1 Let vs feare therefore, least at any time by forsaking the promise of entering into his rest, any of you should seeme to be deprevied. 2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the worde that they heard, profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it. 3 For we which haue beleued, doe enter into rest, as he said to the other, As I haue sworne in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the workes were finished from the foun- dation of the world. 4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise, And God did rest
the seuenth day from all his workes. 
5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.  
6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter thereinto, and they to whom it was first preached, entred not therein for vnbelieves sake:  
7 Againe he appoynted in Dauid a certaine day, by To day, after so long a time, saying, as it is sayd, This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts. 
8 For if Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not after this haue spoke of an other day.  
9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.  
10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ceased from his owne works, as God did from his. 
11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same ensample of disobedience. 
12 For the worde of God is liuely, and mightie in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and entreth through, euen vnto the diuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit, and of the iointes, and the marow, and is a discerner of the thoughtes, and the intents of the heart. 
13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and open vnto his eyes, with whome we haue to doe. 
14 Seeing then that wee haue a great hie Priest, which is entred into heauen, euen Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs holde fast our profession. 
15 For we haue not an hie Priest, which can not be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like sort, yet without sinne. 
16 Let vs therefore goe boldly vnto ye throne of grace, that we may receiue mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

5 
1 For every hie Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both giftes and sacrifices for sinnes. 
2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that hee also is compassed with infirmitie, 
3 And for the sames sake he is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for his own part, as for ye peoples. 
4 And no man taketh this honor vnto him selfe, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. 
5 So likewise Christ tooke not to him selfe this honour, to be made the hie Priest, but hee that sayd vnto him, Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee, gaue it him. 
6 As he also in another place speaketh, Thou art a Priest for euer, after ye order of Melchi-sedec. 
7 Who in the dayes of his flesh did offer vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares vnto him, that was able to saue him from death, and was also heard in that which he feared. 
8 And though he were ye Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered. 
9 And being consecrate, was made the authour of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him: 
10 And is called of God an hie Priest after the order of Melchi-sedec. 
11 Of whome we haue many things to say, which are hard to be vtttered, because ye are dull of hearing. 
12 For when as concerning ye time ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye neede againe that we teach you what are the first principles of the worde of God: and are become such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong meate. 
13 For every one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the worde of righteousnes: for he is a babe. 
14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of age, which through long custome haue their wits exercised, to discerne both good and euill.

6 
1 Therefore, leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forward vnto perfection, not laying againe ye foundation of repetance from dead workes, and of faith toward God, 
2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and laying on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead,
and of eternall judgement. 

And this will we doe if God permit. 

For it is impossible that they which were once lightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost, 

And haue tasted of the good word of God, and of the powers of the world to come, 

If they fal away, should be renued againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to themselues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him. 

For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth off vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meete for them by whome it is dressed, receiuethin blessing of God. 

But that which beareth thornes and briars, is reproued, and is neere vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned. 

But because we haue persuaded our selues better things of you, and such as accompany saluation, though we thus speake. 

For God is not vnrighteous, that hee should forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye shewed 

toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred vnto the Saints, and yet minister. 

And we desire that every one of you shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the ende, 

That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, which through faith and patience, inherit the promises. 

For when God made the promise to Abraham, because he had no greater to sweare by, he sweare by himselfe, 

Saying, Surely I wil abundantly blesse thee and multiplie thee maruellously. 

And so after that he had taried patiently, he enjoyed the promise. 

For men verely sweare by him that is greater then themselues, and an othe for confirmation is among them an ende of all strife. 

So God, willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise the stablenes of his counsel, bound himselfe by an othe, 

That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpossible that God should lye, we might haue strong consolation, which haue our refuge to lay holde vpon that hope that is set before vs, 

Which hope we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entretareth into that which is within the vaile, 

Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, euen Iesus that is made an he Priest for euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

7

For this Melchi-sedec was King of Salem, the Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him: 

To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is by interpretation King of rightousnes: after that, he is also King of Salem, that is, King of peace, 

Without father, without mother, without kinred, and hath neither beginning of his dayes, neither ende of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer. 

Nowe consider how great this man was, vnto whom euen the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoyles. 

For verely they which are the childe of Leui, which receiue the office of the Priesthode, haue a commandement to take, according to the Law, tithes of the people (that is, of their bethren) though they came out of ye loynes of Abraham. 

But he whose kindred is not couted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises. 

And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater. 

And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he receiued them, of whome it is witnessed, that he liueth. 

And to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiueyth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham. 

For hee was yet in the loynes of his father Abraham, when Melchi-sedec met him. 

If therefore perfection had bene by the Priesthode of the Leuites (for vnder it the Lawe was established to the people) what
needed it furthermore, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchi-sedec, and not to be called after the order of Aaron? 12 For if the Priesthood be changed, then of necessitie must there be a change of the Lawe. 13 For hee of whome these things are spoken, pertaineth vnnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the altar. 14 For it is evident, that our Lord sprung out of Iuda, concerning the which tribe Moses spake nothing, touching the Priesthood. 15 And it is yet a more evident thing, because that after the similitude of Melchi-sedec, there is risen vp another Priest, 16 Which is not made Priest after the Law of the carnal commandement, but after the power of the endlesse life. 17 For hee testifieth thus, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec. 18 For the commandement that went afore, is disanulled, because of the weakenes thereof, and vnprofitablenes. 19 For the Law made nothing perfite, but the bringing in of a better hope made perfite, whereby we drawe neere vnnto God. 20 And for as much as it is not without an othe (for these are made Priestes without an othe: 21 But this is made with an othe by him that said vnnto him, The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec) 22 By so much is Iesus made a suretie of a better Testament. 23 And among them many were made Priestes, because they were not suffered to endure, by the reason of death. 24 But this man, because hee endureth euer, hath a Priesthood, which cannot passe from one to another. 25 Wherefore, hee is able also perfectly to saue them that come vnnto God by him, seeing hee euer lieth, to make intercession for them. 26 For such an hee Priest it became vs to haue, which is holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made hier then the heauen: 27 Which needeth not daily as those hee Priestes to offer vp sacrifice, first for his owne sinnes, and then for the peoples: for that did he once, when he offered vp himselfe. 28 For the Law maketh men hie Priestes, which haue infirmitie: but the word of the othe that was since the Lawe, maketh the Sonne, who is consecrated for euermore.

8

1 Nowe of the things which we haue spoken, this is the summe, that wee haue such an hie Priest, that sitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in heauen, 2 And is a minister of the Sancturie, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight, and not man. 3 For every high Priest is ordeined to offer both giftes and sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie, that this man shoule haue somewhat also to offer. 4 For he were not a Priest, if he were on the earth, seeing there are Priestes that according to the Lawe offer giftes, 5 Who serue vnnto the paterne and shadewe of heauenly things, as Moses was warned by God, who he was about to finish the Tabernacle. See, saide hee, that thou make all things according to the paterne, shewed to thee in the mount. 6 But nowe our hie Priest hath obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the Mediatour of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises. 7 For if that first Testament had bene vnblameable, no place should have bene sought for the second. 8 For in rebuking them he saith, Beholde, the dayes will come, saith the Lord, when I shall make with the house of Israel, and with the house of Iuda a newe Testament: 9 Not like the Testament that I made with their fathers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. 10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those dayes, saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes in their minde, and in their heart I will write them, and I wil be their God, and they shalbe my people, 11 And they shall
not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them. For I will be merciful to their vnrighetousnes, and I wil remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more. In that he saith a new Testament, he hath abrogate the olde: nowe that which is disanulled and waxed olde, is ready to vanish away.

9

1 Then the first Testament had also ordinances of religion, and a worldly Sanctuarie. 2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candles-sticke, and the table, and the shewe-bread, which Tabernacle is called the Holy places. 3 And after the seconde vaile was the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all. Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Testament ouerlayde rounde about with golde, wherein the golden pot, which had Manna, was, and Aarons rod that had budded, and the tables of the Testament. 5 And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seat: of which things we will not nowe speake particularly. 6 Nowe when these things were thus ordeined, the Priestes went alwayse into the first Tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice. 7 But into the second went the hie Priest alone, once euery yere, not without blood which hee offered for himselfe, and for the ignoraunces of the people. 8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into ye Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was standing. 9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offred gifts and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conscience, him that did the seruice, Which only stood in meates and drinkes, and diuers washings, and carnal rites, which were inioyned, vntill the time of reformation. 11 But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacl, not made with handes, that is, not of this building, 12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once vnto the holy place, and obtained eternall redemption for vs. 13 For if the blood of bulles and of goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them that are vnclene, sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the fleshe, 14 How much more shall the blood of Christ which through the eternall Spirit offered himselfe without fault to God, purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God? 15 And for this cause is he the Mediatour of the newe Testament, that through death which was for the redemption of the transgressions that were in the former Testament, they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance. 16 For where a Testament is, there must be the death of him that made the Testa ment. 17 For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is alioe. 18 Wherefore neither was the first ordeined without blood. 19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, he tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll and hyssope, and sprinkled both the booke, and all the people, Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you. 21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle with blood also, and all the ministrying vessels. 22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission. 23 It was then necessary, that the similitudes of heauenely things should be purifed with such things: but the heauenely things them selues are purifed with better sacrifices then are these. 24 For Christ is not entred into ye holy places that are made with
hands, which are similitudes of ye true Sancturie: but is entred into very heauen, to appeare now in ye sight of God for vs, 25 Not that he should offer himselfe often, as the hie Priest entred into the Holy place euer yeere with other blood, 26 (For then must he haue often suffred since the foundation of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bene made manifest, once to put away sinne by the sacrifice of him selfe. 27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they shall once die, and after that commeth the judgement: 28 So Christ was once offered to take away the sinnes of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shall he appeare the second time without sinne vnto saluation.

10

1 For the Law hauing the shadowe of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie the commers thereunto. 2 For would they not then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because that the offerers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes? 3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance againe of sinnes euery yeere. 4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of bulles and goates should take away sinnes. 5 Wherefore when he commeth into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not: but a body hast thou ordened me. 6 In burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou hast had no pleasure. 7 Then I sayd, Lo, I come (In the beginning of the booke it is written of me) that I should doe thy will, O God. 8 Aboue, when he sayd, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou wouldest not haue, neither hadst pleasure therein (which are offered by the Lawe) 9 Then sayd he, Lo, I come to doe thy wil, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second. 10 By the which wil we are sanctified, euen by the offring of the body of Iesus Christ once made. 11 And euerie Priest standeth dayly ministring, and oft times offreth one maner of offring, which can neuer take away sinnes: 12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes, sitteth for euer at the right hand of God, 13 And from hencefoorth tarieth, till his enemies be made his footsteole. 14 For with one offering hath he consecrated for euer them that are sanctified. 15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs record: for after that he had sayd before, 16 This is the Testament that I will make vnto them after those dayes, sayth the Lord, I wil put my Lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I will write them. 17 And their sinnes and injusties will I remember no more. 18 Nowe where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sinne. 19 Seeing therefore, brethern, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bolde to enter into the Holy place, 20 By the newe and liuing way, which hee hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is, his fleshe: 21 And seeing we haue an hie Priest, which is ouer the house of God, 22 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euill conscience, 23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope, without wauering, (for he is faithfull that promised) 24 And let vs consider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes, 25 Not forsaking the fellowship that we haue among our selues, as the maner of some is: but let vs exhort one another, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere. 26 For if we sinne willingly after that we haue receiued and acknowledged that trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes, 27 But a fearefull looking for of judgement, and violent
fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries. 28 He that despiseth Moses Law, dieth without mercy vnder two, or three witnesses: 29 Of howe much sorer punishment suppose ye shall hee be worthy, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God, and counteth the blood of the Testament as an vn-holy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doeth despite the Spirit of grace? 30 For we know him that hath sayd, Vengeance belongeth vnto mee: I will recompense, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people. 31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God. 32 Nowe call to remembrance the dayes that are passed, in the which, after ye had receiued light, ye endured a great fight in afflictions, 33 Partly while yee were made a gazing stocke both by reproches and afflictions, and partly while ye became companions of them which were so tossed to and from. 34 For both ye sorrowed with mee for my bonds, and suffered with ioy the spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues howe that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring substance. 35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompense of reward. 36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promise. 37 For yet a very little while, and hee that shall come, will come, and will not tary. 38 Nowe the iust shall liue by faith: but if any withdrawe himselfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him. 39 But we are not they which withdrawe our selues vnto perdition, but follow faith vnto the conservacion of the soule.

11

1 Now faith is the grounds of things, which are hoped for, and the evidence of things which are not seen. 2 For by it our elders were well reported of. 3 Through faith we understand that the world was ordeined by the worde of God, so that the things which we see, are not made of things which did appeare. 4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a greater sacrifice then Cain, by the which he obtained witnes that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: by the which faith also he being dead, yet speaketh. 5 By faith was Enoch translated, that he should not see death: neither was he found: for God had translated him: for before he was translated, he was reported of, that he had pleased God. 6 But without faith it is vnpossible to please him: for he that commeth to God, must beleue that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that secke him. 7 By faith Noe being warned of God of the things which were as yet not seene, moued with reuereuce, prepared the Arke to the sauing of his housholde, through the which Arke hee condemned the world, and was made heire of the rightouenes, which is by faith. 8 By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed God, to goe out into a place, which hee should afterward receiuie for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whither he went. 9 By faith he abode in the land of promise, as in a strange countrey, as one that dwelt in tents with Isaac and Iacob heires with him of the same promise. 10 For he looked for a citie haung a foundation, whose builder and maker is God. 11 Through faith Sara also receiued strength to conceiuie seede, and was deliuered of a childe when she was past age, because she judged him faithfull which had promised. 12 And therefore sprang there of one, euen of one which was dead, so many as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the land of the sea shore which is innumerable. 13 All these died in faith, and receiued not the promises, but sawe them a farre off, and beleueed them, and receiued them thankfully, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. 14 For they that say such things, declare plainly, that
they seeke a countrey. 15 And if they had bene mindfull of that countrey, from whence they came out, they had leasure to haue returned. 16 But nowe they desire a better, that is an heauenly: wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie. 17 By faith Abraham offered vp Isaac, when he was tryed, and he that had receiued the promises, offered his onely begotten sonne. 18 (To whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy seede be called.) 19 For he considered that God was able to raise him vp euen from the dead: from whence he receiued him also after a sort. 20 By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau, concerning things to come. 21 By faith Iacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Joseph, and leaning on the ende of his staffe, worshipped God. 22 By faith Joseph when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, and gaue commandement of his bones. 23 By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they sawe he was a proper childe, neither feared they the kings commandement. 24 By faith Moses when he was come to age, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter, 25 And chose rather to suffer adversitie with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sinnes for a season, 26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnfo the recompence of the reward. 27 By faith he forsoooke Egypt, and feared not the fiercenes of the king: for he endured, as he that sawe him which is inuisible. 28 Through faith he ordered the Passeouer and the effusion of blood, least he that destroyed the first borne, should touche them. 29 By faith they passed through the red sea as by drie land, which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, they were swallowed vp. 30 By faith the walles of Iericho fell downe after they were copassd about seue dayes. 31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them which obeyed not, when she had receiued the spies peaceably. 32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be too short for me to tell of Gedeon, of Barac, and of Sampson, and of Iephte, also of Daud, and Samuel, and of the Prophets: 33 Which through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousnesse, obtained the promises, stopped the mouthes of lions, 34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weake were made strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the armies of the a liants. 35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: other also were racked, and woulde not be deliuered, that they might receiue a better resurrection. 36 And others haue bene tryed by mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover by bondes and prisonment. 37 They were stoned, they were hewn asunder, they were tempted, they were slaine with the sworde, they wandred vp and downe in sheepe's skinnes, and in goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted, and tormented: 38 Whom the world was not worthie of: they wandered in wilder nesses and mountaines, and dennes, and caues of the earth. 39 And these all through faith obteined good report, and receiued not the promise, 40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfite.

12

1 Wherefore, let vs also, seeing that we are compassed with so great a cloude of witnesses, cast away every thing that presseth downe, and the sinne that hangeth so fast on: let vs runne with patience the race that is set before vs, 2 Looking vnfo Iesus the authour and finisher of our faith, who for the Joy that was set before him, endured the crosse, and despised the shame, and is set at the right hand of
the throne of God. 3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking against of sinners, lest ye should be wearied and faint in your minds. 4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnfo blood, striuing against sinne. 5 And ye haue forgotten the consolation, which speakeh vnfo you as vnfo children, My sonne, despise not the chastening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him. 6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth: and he scourgeth euery sonne that he receiueth: 7 If ye endure chastening, God offereth him selfe vnfo you as vnfo sonnes: for what sonne is it whom the father chasteneth not? 8 If therefore ye be without correction, whereof al are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes. 9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: should we not much rather be in subiection vnfo the father of spirits, that we might liue? 10 For they verely for a fewe dayes chastened vs after their owne plea- sure: but he chasteneth vs for our profile, that we might be partakers of his holinesse. 11 Now no chastising for the present seemeth to be joyous, but, grieuous: but afterwarde, it bringeth the quiet fruitue of righteousness, vnfo them which are thereby exercised. 12 Wherfore lift vp your hands which hang downe, and your weake knees, 13 And make straight steppes vnfo your feete, lest that which is halting, be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed. 14 Followe peace with all men, and holinesse, without the which no man shall see ye Lord. 15 Take heede, that no man fall away from the grace of God: let no roote of bitternes spring vp and trouble you, lest thereby many be defiled. 16 Let there be no fornicator, or prophane person as Esau, which for one portion of meate solde his birthright. 17 For ye knowe howe that afterwarde also when he woulde haue inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he founde no place to repentance, though he sought that blessing with teares. 18 For ye are not come vnfo the mount that might be touched, nor vnfo burning fire, nor to blacknes and darkenes, and tem- pest. 19 Neither vnfo the sounde of a trumpet, and the voyce of wordes, which they that heard it, excused themselves, that the word should not be spoken to them any more, 20 (For they were not able to abide that which was commanded, yea, though a beast touche the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust through with a dart: 21 And so terrible was the sight which appeared, that Moses said, I feare and quake.) 22 But ye are come vnfo the mount Sion, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celestiall Hierusalem, and to ye company of innumerable Angels, 23 And to the assembleie and congregation of the first borne, which are written in heauen, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just and perfite men, 24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the new Testament, and to the blood of sprinkling that speakeh better things then that of Abel. 25 See that ye despise not him that speakeh: for if they escaped not which re- fused him, that spake on earth: much more shall we not escape, if we turne away from him, that speakeh from heauen. 26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth and nowe hath declared, saying, Yet once more will I shake, not the earth onely, but also heauen. 27 And this word, Yet once more, sig- nifieth the remouing of those things which are shaken, as of things which are made with hands, that the things which are not shaken, may remaine. 28 Wherefore seeing we receiue a kingdome, which cannot be shaken, let vs haue grace whereby we may so serue God, that we may please him with reuerence and feare. 29 For euem our God is a consuming fire.
13

1 Let brotherly love continue. 2 Be not forgetfull to intertaine strangers: for thereby some haue receiued Angels into their houses vnwares. 3 Remember them that are in bonds, as though ye were bounde with them: and them that are in affliction, as if ye were also afflicted in the body. 4 Mariage is honorable among all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. 5 Let your conversacion be without couetousnesse, and be content with those things that ye haue, for he hath said, 6 I will not faile thee, neither forsake thee: 7 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is mine helper, neither will I feare what man can doe vnto me. 8 Remember them which haue the oversight of you, which haue declared vnto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering what hath bene the ende of their conversacion. Jesus Christ yesterday, and to day, the same also is for euer. 9 Be not caried about with diuers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be stablished with grace, and not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue bene occupied therein. 10 We haue an altar, whereof they haue no authoritie to eate, which serue in the tabernacle. 11 For the bodies of those beastes whose blood is brought into the Holy place by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe. 12 Therefore euen Jesus, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate. 13 Let vs goe foorth to him therefore out of the campe, bearing his reproch. 14 For here haue we no continuing citie: but we seeke one to come. 15 Let vs therefore by him offer the sacrifice of prayse alwaies to God, that is, the fruite of the lippes, which confesse his Name. 16 To doe good, and to distribute forget not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased. 17 Obey them that haue the oversight of you, and submit your selues: for they watche for your soules, as they that must giue accountes, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you. 18 Pray for vs: for we are assured that we haue a good conscience in all things, desiring to liue honestly. 19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly, that yee so doe, that I may be restored to you more quickly. 20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the everlasting Couenant, 21 Make you perfect in all good workes, to doe his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise for euer and euer, Amen. 22 I beseeche you also, brethren, suffer the wordes of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes. 23 Knowe that our brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whome (if hee come shortly) I will see you. 24 Salute all them that haue the oversight of you, and all the Saintes. They of Italie salute you. 25 Grace be with you all, Amen. 'Written to the Hebrewes from Italie, and sent by Timotheus.'
THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF JAMES

1 James a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve Tribes, which are scattered abroad, salutation. 2 My brethren, count it exceeding joy, when ye fall into divers temptations, 3 Knowing that ye trying of your faith bringeth forth patience, 4 And let patience have her perfect worke, that ye may be perfect and entier, lacking nothing. 5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him ask of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shall be giuen him. 6 But let him ask in faith, and wauer not: for hee that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the winde, and caried away. 7 Neither let that man think that hee shall receiue any thing of the Lord. 8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his waies. 9 Let the brother of lowe degree reioyce in that he is exalted: 10 Againe hee that is rich, in that hee is made lowe: for as the flower of the grasse, shall he vanish away. 11 For as when the sunne riseth with heate, then the grasse withereth, and his flower falleth away, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the rich man wither away in all his waies. 12 Blessed is ye man, that endureth tentation: for when he is tried, hee shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him. 13 Let no man say when hee is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God can not bee tempted with euill, neither tempteth he any man. 14 But euery man is tempted, when hee is drawn away by his owne concupiscence, and is entised. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Erre not, my deare brethren. 17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whome is no variablenes, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his owne will begethe hee vs with the woorde of trueth, that we shoulde be as the first fruites of his creatures. 19 Wherefore my deare brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, and slowe to wrath. 20 For the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the righteousnesse of God. 21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of maliciousnesse, and receiue with meekenes the word that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules. 22 And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues. 23 For if any heare the woorde, and doe it not, he is like vnto a man, that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse. 24 For when he hath considered himselfe, hee goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately what maner of one he was. 25 But who so looketh in the perfect Lawe of libertie, and continueth therein, hee not being a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deede. 26 If any man amog you seeeme religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceieth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine. 27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the Father, is this, to visithe the fatherlesse, and widdowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the world.

2

1 My brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Jesus Christ in respect of persons. 2 For if there come into your company a man with a golde ring, and in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment, 3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gaie clothing; and say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole, 4 Are yee not partiall in your selues, and are become judges
of euill thoughts? 5 Hearken my be-
loued brethren, hath not God chosen
the poore of this worlde, that they
should be rich in faith, and heires
of the kingdome which he promised
to them that loue him? 6 But ye
have despised the poore. Doe not
the riche oppresse you by tyrannie,
and doe not they drawe you before
the judgement seates? 7 Doe nor they
blaspheme the worthie Name after
which yee be named? 8 But if yee
fulfill the royall Lawe according to
the Scripture, which saith, Thou shalt
loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, yee
doe well. 9 But if yee regarde the
persons, yee commit sinne, and are
rebuked of the Lawe, as transgres-
sours. 10 For whosoeuer shall keepe
the whole Lawe, and yet faileth in
one poynt, hee is guiltie of all. 11 For
he that saide, Thou shalt not commit
adulterie, saide also, Thou shalt not
kill. Nowe though thou doest none
adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art
a transgressour of the Lawe. 12 So
speake ye, and so doe, as they that
shall be judged by the Lawe of liber-
tie. 13 For there shalbe condemna-
tion mericles to him that sheweth not
mercie, and mercie reioyceth against
condemnation. 14 What auaileth it,
my brethren, though a man saith he
hath faith, when he hath no workes?
can that faith saue him? 15 For if
a brother or a sister bee naked and
destitute of daily foode, 16 And one of
you say vnto them, Depart in peace:
warne your selues, and fill your bel-
lies, notwithstanding ye giue them not
those things which are needefull to
the body, what helpheth it? 17 Euen
so the faith, if it haue no worokes,
is dead in it selfe. 18 But some man
might say, Thou hast the faith, and
I haue worokes: shewe me thy faith
out of thy worokes, and I will shewe
thee my faith by my worokes. 19 Thou
beleeuest that there is one God: thou
doest well: the deuils also beleue
it, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou
vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that
the faith which is without workes, is
dead? 21 Was not Abraham our fa-
ther justified through workes, when
he offred Isaac his sonne vpon the
altar? 22 Seest thou not that the
faith wrought with his workes? and
through the workes was the faith
made perfect. 23 And the Scripture
was fulfilled which sayeth, Abraham
beleeued God, and it was imputed
vnto him for righteousnesse: and
hee was called the friende of God.
24 Ye see then howe that of workes
a man is justified, and not of faith
onely. 25 Likewise also was not Rahab
the harlot justified through workes,
when she had receiued ye messen-
gers, and sent them out another way?
26 For as the body without ye spirit
is dead, euen so the faith without
workes is dead.

3

1 My brethren, be not many mas-
ters, knowing that we shall receiue
the greater condemnation. 2 For in
many things we sinne all. If
any man sinne not in word, he is a
perfect man, and able to bridle all
the body. 3 Beholde, we put bittes
into the horses mouthes, that they
should obey vs, and we turne about
all their bodie. 4 Behold also the
shippes, which though they be so
great, and are driuen of fierce windes,
yet are they turned about with a
very small rudder, whither soeuer
the governour listeth. 5 Euen so the
tongue is a little member, and boast-
eth of great things: beholde, howe
great a thing a little fire kindleth.
6 And the tongue is fire, yea, a worlde
of wickednesse: so is the tongue set
among our members, that it defileth
the whole body, and setteth on fire
the course of nature, and it is set on
fire of hell. 7 For the whole nature of
beasts, and of birds, and of creeping
things, and things of the sea is tamed,
and hath bene tamed of the nature of
man. 8 But the tongue can no man
tame. It is an vnruely euill, full of
deadly poisons. 

9 Therewith bless we God euen the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. 

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be. 

11 Doeth a fountain send forth at one place sweete water and bitter? 

12 Can ye figge tree, my brethren, bring forth olives, either a vine figges? so can no fountain make both salt water and sweete.

13 Who is a wise and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew by good conversacon his workes in meekenesse of wisdome. 

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be liars against the trueth. 

15 This wisedome descendeth not from aboue, but is earthly, sensual, and deuellish. 

For where enuying and strife is, there is sedition, and all maner of euill workes. 

17 But the wisedome that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be intreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without judging, and without hipocrisie. 

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sownen in peace, of them that make peace.

4 

1 From whence are warres and contentions among you? are they not hence, euens of your pleasures, that fight in your members? 

2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye enuiue, and desire immoderately, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, and get nothing, because ye aske not. 

3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures. 

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, knowe ye not that the amitie of the world is the enimitie of God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, maketh himselfe the enemie of God. 

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture sayeth in vaine, The spirit that dwellith in vs, lusteth after enuiue? 

6 But the Scripture offereth more grace, and therefore sayth, God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble. 

7 Submit your selues to God: resist the deuell, and he will flee from you. 

8 Drawe neere to God, and he will drawe neere to you. Clense your handes, ye sinners, and purge your hearts, ye double minded. 

9 Suffer afflictions, and sorrowe ye, and weepe: let your laugher be turned into mourning, and your joy into heavinesse. 

10 Cast downe your selues before the Lord, and he will lift you vp. 

11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren. He that speaketh euill of his brother, or he that condemneth his brother, speaketh euill of ye Law, and condemneth the Lawe: and if thou condemnest the Lawe, thou art not an observer of the Lawe, but a judge. 

12 There is one Lawgiver, which is able to saue, and to destroy. Who art thou that judgest another man? 

13 Go to nowe ye that say, To day or to morowe we will goo into such a citie, and continue there a yeere, and bye and sell, and get gaine, 

14 (And yet ye cannot tell what shalbe to morowe. For what is your life? It is euens a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and afterward vanisheth away) 

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, and, if we liue, we will doe this or that. 

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill. 

17 Therefore, to him that knoweth how to doe well, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

5 

1 Goe to nowe, ye rich men: weepe, and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you. 

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your miseries are moth eaten. 

3 Your gold and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shalbe a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh, as it were fire. 

4 Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes. 

4 Behold, the hire of ye labourers, which haue reaped your
fieldes (which is of you kept backe by fraude) cryeth, and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes. 5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonnes. Ye haue nourished your heartes, as in a day of slaughter. 6 Ye haue condemned and haue killed the iust, and he hath not resisted you. 7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman wayteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill he receiue the former, and the latter rayne. 8 Be ye also patient therefore and settle your hearts: for ye comming of the Lord draweth neere. 9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, least ye be condemned: behold, the iudge standeth before the doore. 10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an example of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lord. 11 Beholde, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue knowen what ende the Lord made. For the Lord is very pitifull and mercifull. 12 But before all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other othe: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation. 13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing. 14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anoynt him with yole in the Name of the Lord. 15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shalbe forgiuen him. 16 Acknowledge your faultes one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man auaileth much, if it be feruent. 17 Helias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rayne, and it rayned not on the earth for three yeeres and sixe moneths. 18 And he prayed againe, and the heauen gaue rayne, and the earth brought forth her fruite. 19 Brethren, if any of you hath erred from the trueth, and some man hath converted him, 20 Let him know that he which hath converted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.
THE FIRST EPISTLE
GENERAL OF PETER

1 PETER an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST; to the strangers that dwell here and there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia, 2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God ye Father vnto sanctification of ye Spirit, through obedience and sprinkeling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace and peace bee multiplied vnto you. 3 Blessed bee God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his abendant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead. 4 To an inheritance immortall and vndefiled, and that withereth not, resered in heauen for vs, 5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith vnto salvation, which is prepared to be shewed in the last time. 6 Wherein yee reioyce, though nowe for a season (if neede require) yee are in heauinesse, through manifolde tentations, 7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then golde that perisheth (though it be tried with fire) might bee founde vnto your praise, and honour and glorie at the appearing of Iesus Christ: 8 Whome yee haue not seene, and yet loue him, in whome nowe, though yee see him not, yet doe you beleue, and reioyce with ioy vnspakeable and glorious, 9 Receiuing the ende of your faith, euen the salvation of your soules. 10 Of the which salvation ye Prophets haue inquired and searched, which prophecied of the grace that should come vnto you, 11 Searching when or what time the Spirite which testified before of Christ which was in them, shoulde declare the sufferings that should come vnto Christ, and the glorie that shoulde follow. 12 Vnto whome it was reueiled, that not vnto themselves, but vnto vs they shoulde minister the things, which are nowe shewed vnto you by them which haue preached vnto you the Gospell by the holy Ghost sent dowe from heauen, the which things the Angells desire to beholde. 13 Wherefore, girde vp the Ioynes of your minde: bee sober, and trust perfectly on that grace that is brought vnto you, in the reu elation of Iesus Christ, 14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues vnto the former lustes of your ignorance: 15 But as hee which hath called you, is holie, so be yee holie in all maner of conversation; 16 Because it is written, Be yee holie, for I am holie. 17 And if ye call him Father, which without respect of person iudgeth according to euer ymans woorke, passe the time of your dwelling here in feare, 18 Knowing that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine converstion, receiued by the traditions of the fathers, 19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe vndefiled, and without spot. 20 Which was ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the last times for your sakes, 21 Which by his meanes doe beleue in God that raised him from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might bee in God, 22 Hauing purified your soules in obeying the trueth through the spirite, to loue brotherly without faining, loue one another with a pure heart ferently, 23 Being borne anewe, not of mortall seede, but of immortall, by the woorde of God, who liueth and endureth for euer. 24 For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glorie of man is as the flower of grasse. The grasse withereth, and the flower falleth away. 25 But the worde of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the woorde which is preached among you.
2

1 Wherefore, laying aside all maliciousnes, and all guile, and dissimulation, and enui, and all euill speaking, 2 As newe borne babes desire that sincere milke of the woorde, that yee may growe thereby, 3 Because yee haue tasted that the Lord is bounti-

full. 4 To whome comming as vnto a liuing stone disallowed of men, but chosen of God and precious, 5 Yee also as liuely stones, bee made a spiritual house, an holy Priesthoode to offer vp spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God by Iesus Christ. 6 Wherefore also it is conteyned in the Scripture, Beholde, I put in Sion a chiefe cor-

er stone, elect and precious: and hee that beleueth therein, shall not be ashamed. 7 Vnto you therefore which beleue, it is precious: but vnto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8 And a stone to stumble at, and a rocke of offence, euon to them which stumble at the woorde, being disobedient, vnto the which thing they were euon ordeined. 9 But yee are a chosen generation, a royall Priesthoode, an holy nation, a people set at libertie, that yee shoulde shewe forth the vertues of him that hath called you out of darkenesse into his marueilous light, 10 Which in time past were not a people, yet are nowe the people of God: which in time past were not under mercie, but nowe haue obtenied mercie. 11 Dearely beloued, I beseeche you, as strangers and pilgrims, abstaine from fleshly lusts, which fight against the soule, 12 And haue your conversacion honest among the Gentiles, that they which speake euill of you as of euill doers, may by your good woorkes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

13 Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lordes sake, whether it be vnto the King, as vnto the superiour, 14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are

sent of him, for the punishment of euill doers, and for the praise of them that doe well. 15 For so is the will of God, that by well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of the foolish men, 16 As free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of malicious-

nesse, but as the seruauntes of God. 17 Honour all men: loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: honour the King. 18 Seruauntes, be subject to your masters with all euill, not onely to the good and courteous, but also to the froward. 19 For this is thanke wor-
thie, if a man for conscience toward God endure grieue, suffering wrong-

fully. 20 For what praise is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faultes, yee take it paciently? but and if when ye doe well, ye suffer wrong and take it paciently, this is acceptable to God. 21 For hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffred for you, leaung you an ensample that ye should fol-

low his steppes. 22 Who did no sinne, neither was there guile found in his mouth. 23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when hee suf-

fered, hee threatned not, but comitted it to him that judgeth righteously. 24 Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that we being dead to sinne, should liue in righteousnesse: by whose stripes ye were healed. 25 For ye were as sheepe going astray: but are nowe returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

3

1 Likewise let the wiues bee subject to their husbands, that euen they which obey not the worde, may with-

out the worde be wonne by the conversacion of the wiues, 2 While they beholde your pure conversacion, which is with feare. 3 Whose appa-

relling, let it not be that outwarde, with broyded heare, and golde put about, or in putting on of apparell: 4 But let it bee the hidde man of the heart, which consisteth in the incor-

ruption of a meeke and quiet spirite,
which is before God a thing much set by. 5 For even after this manner in time past did the holy women, which trusted in God, tire them selues, and were subject to their husbands. 6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and called him Sir: whose daughters ye are, whiles yee doe well, not being afraide of any terroure. 7 Likewise ye husbands, dwel with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessell, even as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted. 8 Finally, be ye all of one minde: one suffer with another: loue as brethren: bee pitifull: bee courteous, 9 Not rendring euill for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrarywise blesse, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should be heires of blessing. 10 For if any man long after life, and to see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lippes that they speake no guile. 11 Let him eschew euill, and do good: let him seeke peace, and follow after it. 12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous, and his eares are open vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lord is against them that do euill. 13 And who is it that will harme you, if ye follow that which is good? 14 Notwithstanding blessed are ye, if ye suffer for righteousness sake. Yea, feare not their feare, neither be troubled. 15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready alwayes to glue an answere to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and reuerence, 16 Hauing a good conscience, that whe they speake euill of you as of euill doers, they may be ashamed, which slander your good conversation in Christ. 17 For it is better (if the will of God be so) that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing. 18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, and was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the spirit. 19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that are in prison. 20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the long suffering of God abode in the dayes of Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein fewe, that is, eight soules were saued in the water. 21 Whereof the baptisme that nowe is, answering that figure, (which is not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demandung which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ, 22 Which is at the right hand of God, gone into heauen, to whom the Angels, and Powers, and might are subject.

4

1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, which is, that he which hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne, 2 That he hence forward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lusts of men, but after the will of God. 3 For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spet the time past of ye life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnes, lustes, drunkenness, in gluttonie, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries. 4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange, that yee runne not with them vnto the same excesse of riot: therefore speake they euill of you, 5 Which shall giue accounts to him, that is readie to judge quicke and dead. 6 For vnto this purpose was the Gospell preached also vnto the dead, that they might bee condemned, according to men in the flesh, but might liue according to God in the spirit. 7 Now the ende of all things is at hand. Be ye therefore sober, and watching in prayer. 8 But aboue all things haue feruent loue among you: for loue shall couer the
multitude of sinnes. 9 Be ye harbourous one to another, without grudging. 10 Let every man as hee hath received the gift, minister the same one to another, as good disposers of the manifolde grace of God. 11 If any man speake, let him speake as the wordes of God. If any man minister, let him do it as of the abilitie which God ministreth, that God in al things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whome is prayse and dominion for euer, and euer, Amen. 12 Dearely beloved, thinke it not strange concerning the firie triall, which is among you to proue you, as though some strange thing were come vnto you: 13 But reioyce, in asmuch as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings, that when his glory shall appeare, ye may be glad and reioyce. 14 If yee be railed vpon for the Name of Christ, blessed are ye: for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you: which on their part is euill spoken of: but on your part is glorified. 15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or as a thiefe, or an euil doer, or as a busibodie in other mens matters. 16 But if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not bee ashamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe. 17 For the time is come, that judgement must beginne at the house of God. If it first beginne at vs, what shall the ende be of them which obey not the Gospel of God? 18 And if the righteous scarcely bee saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare? 19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit their soules to him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.  

5  

1 The elders which are among you, I beseech which am also an elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shalbe reueiled, 2 Feede the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde: 3 Not as though ye were lords ouer Gods heritage, but that yee may bee enamples to the flocke. 4 And when that chiefe shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glory. 5 Likewise ye jonger, submit your selues vnto the elders, and submit your selues every man, one to another: decke your selues inwardly in lowlinesse of minde: for God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble. 6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time. 7 Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you. 8 Be sober, and watch: for your aduersarie the deuil as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure: 9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same affliccions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the world. 10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a little, make you perfite, confirme, strengthen and stablize you. 11 To him be glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen. 12 By Syluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue I written briefly, exhorting and testifying how that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand. 13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne. 14 Greete yee one another with the kisse of loue. Peace be with you all which are in Christ Iesus, Amen.
THE SECOND EPISTLE
GENERAL OF PETER

1 Simon Peter a servant and an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to you which have obtained like precious faith with vs by the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ: 2 Grace and peace be multiplied to you, through the acknowledging of God, and of Jesus our Lord, 3 According as his divine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that perteine vnto life and godliness, through the acknowledging of him that hath called vs vnto vnto glory and vertue. 4 Whereby most great and precious promises are giuen vnto vs, that by them ye should be partakers of the divine nature, in that ye flee the corruption, which is in the world through lust. 5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereunto: ioynne moreouer vertue with your faith: and with vertue, knowledge: 6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlines: 7 And with godlines, brotherly kindnes: and with brotherly kindnes, loue. 8 For if these things be among you, and abound, they will make you that ye neither shalbe idle, nor vnfruitfull in the acknowledging of our Lord Jesus Christ: 9 For he that hath not these things, is blinde, and can not see farre off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his olde sinnes. 10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye doe these things, ye shall neuer fall. 11 For by this means an entring shalbe ministred vnto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. 12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though that ye haue knowledge, and be stablished in the present trueth. 13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance, 14 Seeing I knowe that the time is at hand that I must lay downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me. 15 I will endeuer therefore alwayes, that ye also may be able to haue remembrance of these things after my departing. 16 For we followed not deceitful fables when we opened vnto you the power, and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but with our eyes we saw his majestie: 17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voyce to him from that excellent glory, This is my beloved Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. 18 And this voyce we heard when it came from heauen, being with him in the Holy mount. 19 We haue also a most sure worde of the Prophets, to the which ye doe well that yee take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts. 20 So that yee first knowe this, that no prophecie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation. 21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

2

1 Bvt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shalbe false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation. 2 And many shall follow their destructions, by whom the way of trueth shalbe euil spoken of, 3 And through courteousnes shall they with fained words make merchandize of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbereth not. 4 For if God spared not the Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into
hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenes, to be kept vn to damnation: 5 Neither hath spared the olde worlde, but saued Noe the eight person a preacher of righteousness, and brought in the flood vpon the world of the vn godly, 6 And turned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrie into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrewe them, and made them an ensample vn to them that after should liue vn godly, 7 And deliuered iust Loth vexed with the vn cleanlye conversacion of the wicked: 8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vn lawfull deedes.) 9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, and to reserve the vniust vn to the day of judgement vnder punishment. 10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of uncleannes, and despise gouernement, which are bolde, and stand in their owne conceite, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie. 11 Where as the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not railing judgement against them before the Lord. 12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, led with sensualitie and made to be taken, and destroyed, speake euill of those things which they know not, and shall perish through their owne corruption, 13 And shall receiue the wages of vn righteousnes, as they which count it pleasure dayly to liue deliciously. Spottes they are and blottes, deliting them selues in their deceuings, in feasting with you, 14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, and that can not cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue heartes exercised with coutousnesse, they are the children of curse: 15 Which forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, folowing the way of Balaam, the sonne of Bosor, which loued the wages of vnrighteousnes. 16 But he was rebuked for his inquitie: for the dumme beast speaking with mans voyce, forbade the foolishnesse of the Prophet. 17 These are welles without water, and clouds caried about with a tempest, to whome the blacke darkenes is reserued for euer. 18 For in speaking swelling wordes of vanitie, they beguile with wanton nesse through the lusts of the flesh them that were cleane escaped from them which are wrapped in errour, 19 Promising vn to them libertie, and are themselves the seruants of corruption: for of whomsoeuer a man is overcome, euen vn to the same is he in bondage. 20 For if they, after they haue escaped from the filthinesse of the world, through the acknowledging of the Lord, and of the Saviour Jesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein, and overcome, the latter ende is worse with them then the beginning. 21 For it had bene better for them, not to haue acknowledged the way of rightousnes, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandement giuen vn to them. 22 But it is come vn to them, according to the true Prouerbe, The dogge is returned to his owne vomit: and, The sowe that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

3

1 This seconde Epistle I nowe write vn to you, beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes, 2 To call to remembrance the wordes, which were tolde before of the holy Prophetes, and also the commande ment of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour. 3 This first vnderstande, that there shall come in the last dayes, mockers, which wil walke after their lustes, 4 And say, Where is the promise of his comming? for since the fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation. 5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were of olde, and the earth that was of the water and by the water, by the word of God. 6 Wherefore the worlde that then was,
perished, overflowed with the water. 7 But the heavens and earth, which are now, are kept by the same word in store, and reserved unto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of ungodly men. 8 Dearely beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord, as a thousand and a thousand yeeres as one day. 9 The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slackenesse) but is patient toward vs, and would have no man to perish, but would all men to come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thiefe in the night, in the which the heavens shall passe away with a noyse, and the elements shall melt with heate, and the earth with the workes that are therein, shalbe burnt vp. 11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolved, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conversation and godlinesse, 12 Looking for, and hasting unto the comming of that day of God, by the which the heavens being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with heate? 13 But wee looke for newe heavens, and a newe earth, according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousness. 14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that yee looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot and blamelesse. 15 And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is salvation, euen as our beloved brother Paul according to the wisedome giuen vnto him wrote to you, 16 As one, that in all his Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to be vnderstand, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they do also other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction. 17 Ye therefore beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware, lest ye be also plucked away with the errour of the wicked, and fall from your owne stedfastnesse. 18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for euermore. Amen.
THE FIRST EPISTLE 
GENERAL OF JOHN

1 That which was from the begin- 
ning, which wee haue heard, which 
wee haue seene with these our eyes, 
which wee haue looked vpon, and 
these handes of ours haue handled of 
that Word of life, 2 (for that life was 
made manifest, and wee haue seene 
it, and beare witnes, and shew vnto 
you that eternall life, which was 
with the Father, and was made manifest 
vnto vs) 3 That, I say, which wee haue 
seene and heard, declare wee vnto 
you, that yee may also haue fellow- 
ship with vs, and that our fellowship 
also may be with the Father, and with 
his Sonne Iesvs Christ. 4 And these 
things write we vnto you, that that 
your ioy may be full. 5 This then is 
the message which wee haue heard of 
him, and declare vnto you, that God 
is light, and in him is no darkenes. 
6 If wee say that wee haue fellowship 
with him, and walke in darkenesse, 
we lie, and doe not truely: 7 But if 
we walke in the light as he is in the 
light, we haue fellowship one with 
another, and the blood of Iesus Christ 
is cleanseth vs from all sinne. 
8 If we say that we haue no sinne, we 
decieue our selues, and trueth is not 
in vs. 9 If we acknowledge our sinnes, 
he is faithfull and just, to forgiue 
us our sinnes, and to clense vs from all 
vrighteousnes. 10 If wee say we haue 
not sinned, wee make him a liar, and 
his word is not in vs.

2

1 My little children, these things 
write I vnto you, that ye sinne not: 
and if any man sinne, wee haue 
an Advocate with the Father, Iesus 
Christ, the Iust. 2 And he is the re- 
conciliation for our sinnes: and not 
for ours onely, but also for the sinnes 
of the whole world. 3 And hereby 
we are sure that we knowe him, if 
we keepe his commandements. 4 Hee 
that saith, I knowe him, and keepeth 
not his commandements, is a liar, 
and the trueth is not in him. 5 But 
hee that keepeth his worde, in him 
is the Ioue of God perfect in deede: 
hereby wee knowe that ye are in him. 
6 He that saith he remaineth in him, 
ought euens so to walke, as he hath 
walked. 7 Brethren, I write no newe 
commandement vnto you: but an 
olde commandement, which ye haue 
had from the beginning: this olde 
commandement is that worde, which 
yee haue heard from the beginning. 
8 Againe, a new comandement I write 
vnto you, that which is true in him, 
and also in you: for the darkenes is 
past, and that true light now shineth. 
9 He that saith that hee is in that light, 
and hateth his brother, is in darkenes, 
vntill this time. 10 Hee that loueth 
his brother, abideth in that light, and 
there is none occasion of euil in him. 
11 But he that hateth his brother, is 
in darkenesse, and walkeeth in dark- 
nesse, and knoweth not whither hee 
goeth, because that darkenesse hath 
blinded his eyes. 12 Little children, I 
write vnto you, because your sinnes 
are forgien you for his Names sake. 
13 I write vnto you, fathers, because 
yee haue knowen him that is from 
the beginning. I write vnto you, yong 
men, because ye haue overcome that 
wicked one. I write vnto you, little 
children, because ye haue knowen ye 
Father. 14 I haue written vnto you, 
fathers, because ye haue knowen him, 
that is from the beginning. I haue 
written vnto you, yong men, because 
ye are strong, and the worde of God 
abideth in you, and ye haue overcome 
that wicked one. 15 Loue not this 
world, neither the things that are 
in this world. If any man loue this 
world, the loue of the Father is not 
in him. 16 For all that is in this world 
(as the lust of the flesh, the lust of 
the eyes, and the pride of life) is not 
of the Father, but is of this world. 
17 And this world passeth away, and 
the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth
the will of God, abideth euer. 18 Litle children, it is the last time, and as ye haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euene now are there many Antichrists: whereby we know that it is the last time. 19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bene of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But this cometh to passe, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs. 20 But ye haue an ointment from that Holy one, and know all things. 21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye knowe not the truth: but because ye knowe it, and that no lie is of the truth. 22 Who is a liar, but he that denyeth that Jesus is that Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denyeth the Father and the Sonne. 23 Whosoever denyeth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father. 24 Let therefore abide in you that same which ye haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father. 25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, euene that eternall life. 26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceive you. 27 But that anointing which ye receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and ye neede not that any man teach you: but as the same Anoynting teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide in him. 28 And nowe, litle children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may be bolde, and not be ashamed before him at his comming. 29 If ye know that he is righteous, know ye that he which doeth righteously, is borne of him.

3

1 Behold, what loue the Father hath giuen to vs, that we should be called the sonnes of God: for this cause this world knoweth you not, because it knoweth not him. 2 Dearly beloued, nowe are we the sonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifest what we shall be: and we know that when he shalbe made manifest, we shalbe like him: for we shall see him as he is. 3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth himselfe, euene as he is pure. 4 Whosoever committeth sinne, transgresseth also the Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Lawe. 5 And ye knowe that hee was made manifest, that he might take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne. 6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seene him, neither hath known him. 7 Litle children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteouesnes, is righteous, as hee is righteous. 8 He that comitteth sinne, is of the deuil: for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose was made manifest that Sonne of God, that he might loose the workes of the deuil. 9 Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remaineth in him, neither can hee sinne, because he is borne of God. 10 In this are the children of God knownen, and the children of the deuil: whosoever doeth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother. 11 For this is the message, that ye heard from the beginning, that we should loue one another, 12 Not as Cain which was of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and wherefore slewe he him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good. 13 Marueile not, my brethren, though this world hate you. 14 We know that we are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: he that loueth not his brother, abideth in death. 15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a manslayer: and ye know that no manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him. 16 Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that he layde downe his life for vs: therefore we ought also to lay downe our liues for the brethren. 17 And whosoever hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his com-
passion from him, howe dwelleth the loue of God in him? 18 My litle children, let vs not loue in worde, neither in tongue onely, but in deede and in trueth. 19 For thereby we know that we are of the trueth, and shall before him assure our hearts. 20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things. 21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldnes toward God. 22 And whatsoeuer we aske we receiue of him, because we keepe his commandements, and do those things which are pleasing in his sight. 23 This is then his commandement, That we beleue in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another as he gaue commandement. 24 For hee that keepe his commandements, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we knowe that hee abideth in vs, euen by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

4

1 Dearly beloved, beleue not euery spirit, but trie the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this worlde. 2 Hereby shall ye know the Spirit of God, Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God. 3 And euery spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the spirit of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and nowe already he is in this world. 4 Little children, ye are of God, and haue overcome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this world. 5 They are of this worlde, therefore speake they of this world, and this world heareth them. 6 We are of God, he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby knowe wee the spirit of trueth, and the spirit of errour. 7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God. 8 Hee that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue. 9 Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongst vs, because God sent that his onely begotten sonne into this world, that we might liue through him. 10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne to be a reconciliacion for our sinnes. 11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another. 12 No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs. 13 Hereby know we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit. 14 And we haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent that Sonne to be ye Sauiour of the world. 15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the Sone of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God. 16 And we haue known, and beleueeu ye loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him. 17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we should haue boldnes in the day of judgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this world. 18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath painfulnesse: and he that feareth, is not perfect in loue. 19 We loue him, because he loued vs first. 20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loueth not his brother whom he hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene? 21 And this commandement haue we of him, that he that loueth God, should loue his brother also.

5

1 Whosoeuer beleueueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him. 2 In this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements. 3 For this is the loue
of God, that we keepe his commandements: and his commandements are not burdensome. 4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world: and this is that victorie that hath ouercome this world, euen our faith. 5 Who is it that ouercommeth this world, but he which beleeeueth that Iesus is that Sonne of God? 6 This is that Jesus Christ that came by water and blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is that Spirit, that beareth witnesse: for that Spirit is trueth. 7 For there are three, which beare recorde in heauen, the Father, the Worde, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one. 8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the spirit, and the water and the blood: and these three agree in one. 9 If we receive the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he testified of his Sonne. 10 He that beleueueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnes in himselfe: he that beleueueth not God, hath made him a lyar, because he beleueued not ye record, that God witnessed of that his Sonne. 11 And this is that record, to wit, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne. 12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life. 13 These things haue I written vnto you, that beleue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that ye may knowe that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may beleue in the Name of that Sonne of God. 14 And this is that assurance, that we haue in him, that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs. 15 And if we know that he heareth vs, whatsoever we aske, we know that we haue the petitions, that we haue desired of him. 16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, and he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that thou shouldest pray for it. 17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, but there is a sinne not vnto death. 18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not. 19 We knowe that we are of God, and this whole world lieth in wickednesse. 20 But we know that that Sone of God is come, and hath giue vs a mind to know him, which is true: and we are in him that is true, that is, in that his Sone Iesus Christ: this same is that very God, and that eternal life. 21 Litle children, keepe your selues from idoles, Amen.
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF JOHN

1 THE ELDER to the elect Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but also all that haue knowen the trueth, 2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shalbe with vs for euer: 3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue. 4 I reioyced greatly, that I founde of thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commandement of the Father. 5 And nowe beseeche I thee, Lady, (not as writing a newe commandement vnto thee, but that same which we had from the beginning) that we loue one another. 6 And this is that loue, that we should walke after his commandements. This commandement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it. 7 For many deceiuers are entred into this worlde, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist. 8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the things which we haue done, but that we may receiue full reward. 9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne. 10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speede: 11 For he that biddeth him, God speede, is partaker of his euill deedes. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I woulde not write with paper and ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full. 12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greete thee, Amen.
THE THIRD EPISTLE OF JOHN

1 The Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the truth. 2 Beloued, I wish chiefly that thou prosperedst and faredst well as thy soule prospereth. 3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of the truth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the truth. 4 I haue no greater ioy then these, that is, to heare that my sonnes walke in ver- tie. 5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers, 6 Which bare witnesse of thy loue before the Churches. Whom if thou bringest on their iourney as it beseemeth according to God, thou shalt doe well, 7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gentiles. 8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be helpers to the truth. 9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not. 10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to your remem- brance his deedes which he doeth, pratling against vs with malicious wordes, and not therewith content, neither he himselfe receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that woulde, and thrusteth them out of the Church. 11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doeth euill, hath not seene God. 12 Demetrius hath good report of al men, and of the trueth it selfe: yea, and wee our selues beare recorde, and ye know that our record is true. 13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with yncke and pen write vnto thee: 14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speake mouth to mouth. Peace be with thee. The friends salute thee. Greete the friends by name.
THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF JUDE

1 IVde a seruaunt of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them which are called and sanctified of God the Father, and returned to Iesus Christ: 2 Mercie vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied. 3 Beloued, when I gaue al diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needful for me to write vnto you to exhort you, that yee should earnestly contend for the maintenaunce of ye faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saintes. 4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of olde ordained to this condemnation: vn-godly men they are which turne the grace of our God into wantonnesse, and deny God the onely Lord, and our Lord Jesus Christ. 5 I wil therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as ye once knew this, how that the Lord, after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, destroied them afterward which beleued not. 6 The Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitations, hee hath reserued in everlasting chains vnder darkenesse vnfo the judgement of the great day. 7 As Sodom and Gomorrhe, and the cities about them, which in like maner as they did, committed fornication, and followed strange fleshe, are set foorth for an ensample, and suffer the vengeance of eternall fire. 8 Likewise notwithstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh, and despise government, and speake euill of them that are in authoritie. 9 Yet Michael the Archangell, when hee stroue against the devill, and disputed about the body of Moses, durst not blame him with cursed speaking, but sayd, The Lord rebuke thee. 10 But these speake euill of those things, which they know not: and whatsoeuer things they know naturally, as beasts, which are without reason, in those things they corrupt them selues. 11 Wo be vnfo them: for they haue followed the way of Cain, and are cast away by the deceit of Balaams wages, and perish in the gainsaying of Core. 12 These are rockes in your feas of charitie when they feast with you, without al feare, feeding themselves: cloudes they are without water, caried about of windes, corrupt trees and without fruit, twise dead, and plucked vp by ye rootes. 13 They are the raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame: they are wandring starres, to whome is reserued the blackenesse of darkenesse for euer. 14 And Enoch also the seuenth from Adam, prophesied of such, saying, Beholde, the Lord commeth with thousands of his Saints, 15 To giue judgement against al men, and to rebuke all the vngodly among them of all their wicked deeds, which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their cruel speakings, which wicked sinners haue spoken against him. 16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lustes: Whose mouthes speake proud things, hauing mens persons in admiration, because of aduantage. 17 But, yee beloued, remember the worordes which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ, 18 How that they told you that there should be mockers in ye last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly lustes. 19 These are they that separate them selues from other, naturall, hauing not the Spirit. 20 But, yee beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost, 21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnfo eternall life. 22 And haue compassion of some, in putting difference: 23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire, and hate euens that garment which is spotted by the fleshe. 24 Nowe vnfo him that is able to keepe you, that ye fall not, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his
glorie with ioy, 25 That is, to God only wise, our Sauior, be glorie, and maiestie, and dominion, and power, both nowe and for euer, Amen.
THE REVELATION OF ST. JOHN THE DIVINE

1 The Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, to shewe vnto his seruants things which must shortly be done: which he sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn, 2 Who bare record of ye word of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw. 3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of this prophecie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand. 4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace be with you, and peace from him, Which is, and Which was, and Which is to come, and from the seuen Spirits which are before his Throne, 5 And from Iesus Christ, which is that faithfull witnes, and that first begotten of the dead, and that Prince of the Kings of the earth, vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his blood, 6 And made vs Kings and Priests vnto God euen his Father, to him I say be glory, and dominion for euermore, Amen. 7 Beholde, he commeth with cloudes, and euery eye shall see him: yea, euens they which peard him thorowe: and all kinreds of the earth shall waile before him, Euen so, Amen. 8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, Which is, and Which was, and Which is to come, euen the Almighty. 9 Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the yle called Patmos, for the worde of God, and for the witnessing of Iesus Christ. 10 And I was rauished in spirit on the Lordes day, and heard behinde me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet, 11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that first and that last: and that which thou seest, write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea. 12 Then I turned backe to see the voyce, that spake with me: and when I was turned, I sawe seuen golden candlestickes, 13 And in the middes of the seuen candeistickes, one like vnto the Sonne of man, cloathed with a garment downe to the feete, and girded about the pappes with a golden girdle. 14 His head, and heares were white as white wooll, and as snowe, and his eyes were as a flame of fire, 15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, burning as in a fornace: and his voyce as the sounde of many waters. 16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his face shone as the sunne shineth in his strength. 17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete as dead: then he laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not: I am that first and that last, 18 And am al- iue, but I was dead: and beholde, I am alieue for euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hell and of death. 19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shall come hereafter. 20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden candlestickes, is this, The seuen starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlestickes which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

2 Vnto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write, These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, and walketh in the middes of the seuen golden candlestickes. 2 I knowe thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and howe thou canst not beare with them which are euill, and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found the liars. 3 And thou
wast burdened, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted. 4 Neuertheles, I haue somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue. 5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first works: or els I will come against thee shortly, and will remoue thy candlesticke out of his place, except thou amend. 6 But this thou hast, that thou hastest the worke of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate. 7 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the middes of the Paradise of God. 8 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith he that is first, and last, which was dead and is alieue. 9 I knowe thy worke and tribulation, and pouertie (but thou art riche) and I knowe the blasphemie of them, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan. 10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: beholde, it shall come to passe, that the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall haue tribulation tenne dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life. 11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches. He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death. 12 And to the Angel of the Church, which is at Pergamus write, This saith he which hath that sharpe sworde with two edges. 13 I knowe thy worke and where thou dwellest, euен where Satans throne is, and thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, euен in those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth. 14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before ye children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto Idoles, and commit fornication. 15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. 16 Repent thy selfe, or els I will come vnto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sworde of my mouth. 17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth, I will giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a newe name written, which no man knoweth sauing he that receiueueth it. 18 And vnto ye Angel of the Church which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete like fine brasse. 19 I knowe thy worke and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy worke, and that they are more at the last, then at the first. 20 Notwithstanding, I haue a fewe things against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Iezabel, which calleth her selfe a prophetesse, to teache and to deceiue my seruants to make them commit fornication, and to eate meates sacrificed vnto idoles. 21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repenteth not. 22 Beholde, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their worke. 23 And I will kill her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am he which searche the reines and heartes: and I will giue every one of you according vnto your worke. 24 And vnto you I say, the rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue known the deepenes of Satan (as they speake) I will put vpon you none other burden. 25 But that which ye haue alreadie, hold fast till I come. 26 For he that ouercommeth and keepeth my worke vnto the end,
to him will I giue power over nations, 
27 And he shall rule them with a rodde of yron: and as the vessels of a potter, shall they be broken. 28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, so will I giue him the morning starre. 29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite saith to the Churches.

3

1 And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, These things saith he that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen stars, I knowe thy workes: for thou hast a name that thou liuest, but thou art dead. 2 Be awake, and strengthen the things which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfecte before God. 3 Remember therefore, how thou hast receiued and heard, and hold fast and repent. If therefore thou wilt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I wil come vpon thee. 4 Notwithstanding thou hast a few names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy. 5 He that ouercommeth, shalbe clothed in white araye, and I will not put out his name out of the booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels. 6 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirite saith vnto the Churches. 7 And write vnto ye Angel of ye Church which is of Philadelphia, These things saith he that is Holy, and True, which hath ye keye of Dauid, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth. 8 I knowe thy workes: beholde, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength and hast kept my worde, and hast not denied my Name. 9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselves Iewes, and are not, but doe lye: beholde, I say, I will make them, that they shall come and worship before thy feete, and shall knowe that I haue loued thee. 10 Because thou hast kept the woarde of my patience, therefore I wil deliuer thee from the houre of tentation, which will come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth. 11 Beholde, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne. 12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is the newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, and I will write vpon him my newe Name. 13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what ye Spirit saith vnto the Churches. 14 And vnto the Angell of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These things saith Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, that beginning of the creatures of God. 15 I knowe thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I woulde thou werest colde or hote. 16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth. 17 For thou saiest, I am rich and increased with goods, and haue neede of noth- ing, and knowest not howe thou art wretched and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked. 18 I counsell thee to bye of me gold tried by the fire, that thou maiest bee made rich: and white raiment, that thou maiest be clothed, and that thy filthie nakednesse doe not appeare: and anoynth thine eyes with eye salue, that thou maiest see. 19 As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and amend. 20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voice and open ye doore, I wil come in vnto him, and will suppe with him, and he with me. 21 To him that ouercommeth, will I granto to sit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame, and sit with my Father in his throne. 22 Let him that hath
an eare, heare what the Spirit saieth vnto the Churches.

4

1 After this I looked, and beholde, a doore was open in heauen, and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with mee, saying, Come vp hither, and I will shewe thee things which must be done hereafter. 2 And immediately I was rauiished in the spirit, and beheld, a throne was set in heauen, and one sate vpon the throne. 3 And he that sate, was to looke vpon, like vnto a iasper stone, and a sardine, and there was a rainbowe rounde about the throne, in sight like to an emeraude. 4 And round about the throne were foure and twenty seates, and vpon the seates I sawe foure and twenty Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and had on their heads crownes of golde. 5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the seuen spirits of God. 6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto chrystall: and in the middes of the throne, and round about the throne were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde. 7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calfe, and the thirde beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Eagle. 8 And the foure beasts had eche one of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor night, saying, Holy, holy, holy Lord God almighty, Which Was, and Which Is, and Which Is to come. 9 And when those beasts gaue glorie, and honour, and thanks to him that sate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer, The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that sate on the throne and worshipped him that liueth for euermore, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy wils sake they are, and haue beene created.

5

1 And I saw in the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne, a Booke written within, and on the backside, sealed with seuen seales. 2 And I sawe a strong Angell which preached with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open ye booke, and to loose the seales thereof? 3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke thereon. 4 Then I wept much, because no man was foud worthy to open, and to reade the Booke, neither to looke thereon. 5 And one of the Elders saide vnto me, Weepe not: beholde, that Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obteined to open the Booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof. 6 Then I behelde, and loe, in the middes of the throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the mids of the Elders, stoode a Labe as though he had bene killed, which had seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirites of God, sent into all the world. 7 And hee came, and tooke the Booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne. 8 And when he had taken ye Booke, ye foure beasts and the foure and twenty Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euerie one harps and golden vials full of odours, which are the praieres of the Saintes, And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthie to take the Booke, and to open the seales thereof, because thou wast killed, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euerie kinred, and tongue, and people, and nation, And hast made vs vnto our God Kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth. 11 Then I behelde, and I heard the voice of many Angels round about the throne, and about the beasts and the Elders, and there were ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousand thousands,

12 Saying with a loude voice, Worthie
is the Lambe that was killed to receive power, and riches, and wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and praise. 13 And al the creatures which are in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and al that are in them, heard I, saying, Praise, and honour, and glory, and power be vnto him, that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore. 14 And the foure beasts said, Amen, and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth euermore.

6 1 After, I beheld whe the Lambe had opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beastes say, as it were the noise of thunder, Come and see. 2 Therefore I behelde, and loe, there was a white horse, and hee that sate on him, had a bowe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering that he might overcome. 3 And when he had opened the seconde seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see. 4 And there went out an other horse, that was red, and power was giuen to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and there was giuen vnto him a great sword. 5 And when hee had opened the thirde seale, I heard the thirde beast say, Come and see: Then I behelde, and loe, a blake horse, and he that sate on him, had balances in his hand. 6 And I heard a voice in the mids of the foure beastes say, A measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a peny, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not. 7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see. 8 And I looked, and beholde, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and Hell folowed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sworde, and with hunger, and with death, and with beasts of the earth. 9 And when hee had opened the fifth seale, I sawe vnder the altar the soules of them, that were killed for the worde of God, and for the testimonie which they mainteined. 10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, Lord, which art holie and true! doest not thou judge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? 11 And long white robes were giuen vnto every one, and it was saiide vnto them, that they shoulde rest for a little season vntill their fellow seruants, and their brethren that shoulde bee killed euens as they were, were fulfilled. 12 And I behelde when hee had opened the sixt seale, and loe, there was a great earthquake, and the sunne was as blake as sackcloth of heare, and the moone was like blood. 13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a figge tree casteth her greene figges when it is shaken of a mightie winde. 14 And heauen departed away, as a scroule, when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were mooued out of their places. 15 And the Kinges of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mighty men, and euery bondman, and euery free man, hid themselues in dennes, and among the rockes of the moutaines, 16 And said to the mountaines and rocks, Fal on vs, and hide vs from the presence of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe. 17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

7 1 And after that, I sawe foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree. 2 And I sawe another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the liuimg God, and hee cried with a loud voice to the foure Angels to who power was giuen to hurt the earth, and the sea, saying, 3 Hurt ye not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, til we
haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads. 4 And I heard the number of them, which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred and foure and fourtie thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel. 5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand, Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand. 6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand. 7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand. 8 Of the tribe of Josef were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelue thousand. 9 After these things I behelde, and loe a great multitude, which no man coulde number, of all nations and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stoode before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands. 10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, Salutation commeth of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lambe. 11 And all the Angels stoode rounde about the throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, 12 Saying, Amen. Praise, and glory, and wisdom, and thanks, and honour, and power, and might bee vnto our God for euermore, Amen. 13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which are aeraied in log white robes? and whence came they? 14 And I saide vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he saide to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe. 15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple, and he that sitteth on the throne, wil dwell among them. 16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sunne light on them, neither any heate. 17 For the Lambe, which is in the middes of the throne, shall gourne them, and shall leade them vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

8

1 And when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre. 2 And I sawe the seuen Angels, which stooode before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets. 3 Then another Angel came and stooode before the altar hauing a golden censer, and much odours was giuen vnto him, that hee shoulde offer with the prayers of all Saintes vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne. 4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saintes, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand. 5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and earthquake. 6 Then the seuen Angels, which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blow the trumpets. 7 So the first Angell blew the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast into the earth, and the thirde part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt. 8 And the second Angel blew the trumpet, and as it were a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the thirde part of the sea became blood. 9 And the thirde part of the creatures, which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the thirde part of shippes were destroyed. 10 Then the thirde Angel blew the trumpet, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning like a torche, and it fell into
the thirde part of the riuers, and into the fountaines of waters. 11 And the name of the starre is called wormewood: therefore the thirde part of the waters became wormewood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter. 12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, and the thirde part of the sunne was smitten, and the thirde part of the moone, and the thirde part of the starres, so that the thirde part of them was darkened: and the day was smitten, that the thirde part of it could not shine, and likewise the night. 13 And I beheld, and heard one Angel flying thorow the middles of heauen, saying with a loude voyce, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of the trumpet of the three Angels, which were yet to blowe the trumpets.

9

1 And the fifth Angel blew the trumpet, and I saw a starre fall from heauen vnsto the earth, and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit. 2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke of a great fornace, and the sunne, and the ayre were darkened by the smoke of the pit. 3 And there came out of the smoke Locustes vpon the earth, and vnsto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power. 4 And it was comanded them, that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads. 5 And to them was comanded that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed five moneths, and that their paine should be as the paine that commeth of a scorpion, when he hath stung a man. 6 Therefore in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flie from them. 7 And the forme of the locustes was like vnto horses prepared vnsto battel, and on their heads were as it were crownes, like vnsto golde, and their faces were like the faces of men. 8 And they had heare as the heare of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lyons. 9 And they had habbergions, like to habbergions of yron: and the soud of their wings was like the sound of charrets whe many horses runne vnsto battel. 10 And they had tailes like vnto scorpions, and there were stings in their tailes, and their power was to hurt men five moneths. 11 And they haue a King ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in Hebrewe is Abaddon, and in Greeke he is named Apolylon, that is, destroying. 12 One wo is past, and beholde, yet two woes come after this. 13 Then the sixt Angel blew the trumpet, and I heard a voyce from the foure horns of the golden altar, which is before God, Saying to the sixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuers Euphrates. 15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a moneth, and at a yeere, to slay the thirde part of men. 16 And the number of horsemen of warre were twentie thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them. 17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sate on them, hauing firie habbergions, and of Iacynth, and of brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lyons: and out of their mouthes went foorth fire and smoke and brimstone. 18 Of these three was the thirde part of men killed, that is, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouthes. 19 For their power is in their mouthes, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, wherewith they hurt. 20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their handes that they should not
worship devils, and idoles of golde and of siluer, and of brasse, and of stone, and of wood, which neither can see, neither heare nor goe. 21 Also they repented not of their murder, and of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

10

1 And I sawe another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloude, and the raine bowe vpon his head, and his face was as the sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire. 2 And hee had in his hande a little booke open, and he put his right foote vpon the sea, and his left on the earth, 3 And cried with a loude voyce, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cried, seuen thunders vittered their voyces. 4 And whe the seuen thunders had vittered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voice from heauen saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders haue spoken, and write them not. 5 And the Angel which I sawe stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen, 6 And swere by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things that therein are, that time should be no more. 7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when he shall beginne to blow the trumpet, euens the mysterie of God shalbe finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets. 8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, spake vnto me againe, and said, Go and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea and vpon the earth. 9 So I went vnto the Angel, and saide to him, Giue me the little booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shalbe in thy mouth as sweete as honie. 10 Then I tooke the little booke out of ye Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as sweete as honie: but whe I had eaten it my belly was bitter. 11 And he said vnto me, Thou must prophesie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

11

1 Then was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rod, and the Angel stoode by, saying, Rise and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. 2 But the court which is without the temple cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they tr踹e vnder foote, two and fourtie moneths. 3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousande two hundreth and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth. 4 These are two olie trees, and two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth. 5 And if any man wil hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deoureth their enemies: for if any man would hurt the, thus must he be killed. 6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they will. 7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. 8 And their corpes shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord also was cruified. 9 And they of the people and kinreds, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpes three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graves. 10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall rejoyce ouer them and be glad, and shall sende gifts one to an other: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth. 11 But after three dayes and an halfe,
the spirit of life comming from God, shall enter into them, and they shall stande vp vpon their feete: and great feare shall come vpon them which sawe them. 12 And they shall heare a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shall ascend vp to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies shall see them. 13 And the same houre shall there bee a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shalbe slaine in nomber seuen thousande: and the remnant were sore feared, and gaue glory to the God of heauen. 14 The second woe is past, and beholde, the third woe will come anon. 15 And the seuenth Angell blew the trumpet, and there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdoms of this worlde are our Lordes, and his Christes, and he shall reigne for euermore. 16 Then the foure and twentie Elders, which sate before God on their seates, fell vp vpon their faces, and worshipped God, 17 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord God almighty, Which art, and Which wast, and Which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obteined thy kyngdome. 18 And the Gentiles were angrie, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they shoulde be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saintes, and to them that feare thy Name, to small and great, and shouldest destroy them, which destroy the earth. 19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his covenant: and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thunders, and earthquake, and much haile.

12

1 And there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres. 2 And she was with childe, and cried travailing in birth, and was pained ready to be deliuered. 3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for beholde, a great red dragon hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads: 4 And his tale drew the thirde part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deoure her childe, when shee had brought it foorth. 5 So shee brought foorth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of yron: and that her childe was taken vp vnto God and to his throne. 6 And the woman fled into wildernes where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousande, two hundreth and three score dayes. 7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels. 8 But they preuaile not, neither was their place found any more in heauen. 9 And the great dragon, that olde serpent, called the deuil and Satan, was cast out, which deceueth all the world: he was even cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 Then I heard a loude voyce in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kyngdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 But they overcame him by that blood of that Lambe, and by that worde of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death. 12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time. 13 And when the dragon sawe that hee was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man childe. 14 But
Revelation 12:15

And I saw a beast rise out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns were ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw, was like a Leopard, and his feet like a bears, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power and his throne, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondered and followed the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast! who is able to warre with him! And there was given unto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was given unto him, to doe two and fourtie moneths. And he opened his mouth unto blaspheme against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen. And it was given vnlo him to make warre with the Saints, and to overcome them, and power was given him ouer euery kinred, and tongue, and nation. Therefore all that dwell vnpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of that Lambe, which was slain from the beginning of the world. If any man haue an eare, let him heare. If any leade into captiuitie, hee shall go into captiuitie: if any kill with a sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints. And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two horns like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon. And he did all that the first beast could doe before him, and he caused the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he did great wonders, so that hee made fire to come downe from heauen on the earth, in the sight of men, And deceived them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did lie. And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnlo the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should speake, and should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed. And he made all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receive a marke in their right hand or in their foreheads, And that no man might buy or sell, saue hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdome. Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is sixe hundred threeescore and sixe.

Revelation 14:2

Then I looked, and lo, a Lambe stood on mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie and foure thou-sand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads. And I heard a voyce from heauen, as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of a
great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpes. 3 And they sung as it were a newe song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth, fourtie and foure thousand, which were bought from the earth. 4 These are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these follow the Lambe whithersoeuer he goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruietes vnto God, and to the Lambe. 5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God. 6 Then I sawe another Angel flie in the mids of heauen, hauing an eu-erlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euerie nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people, 7 Saying with a loude voyce, Feare God, and gue glory to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worship him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters. 8 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon that great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for she made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. 9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loude voyce, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or on his hand, 10 The same shall drinke of the wine of ye wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine, which is powred into the cup of his wrath, and he shalbe tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy Angels, and before the Lambe. 11 And the smoke of their torment shall ascend euermore: and they shall haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueueth the print of his name. 12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, and the fayth of Iesus. 13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, The dead which die in the Lord, are fully blessed. Even so sayth the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, and their workes follow them. 14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle. 15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce to him that sate on the cloude, Thrust in thy sickle and reape: for the time is come to reape: for the haruest of the earth is ripe. 16 And he that sate on the cloude, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped. 17 Then an other Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle. 18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loude crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, and sayd, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth: for her grapes are ripe. 19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and cast them into that great wine presse of the wrath of God. 20 And the wine presse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the wine presse, vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundreth furlongs.

15

1 And I sawe another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God. 2 And I sawe as it were a glassie sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victorie of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stand at the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God, 3 And they sung the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy workes, Lord God almightie:
jus\text{t} \text{and\ true\ are\ thy\ ways,\ King\ of\ Saints.} \ 4 \text{Who\ shall\ not\ feare\ thee,\ O\ Lord,\ and\ glorifie\ thy\ Name!\ for\ thou\ one\ art\ holy,\ and\ all\ nations\ shall\ come\ and\ worship\ before\ thee:\ for\ thy\ judgements\ are\ made\ manifest.} \ 5 \text{And\ after\ that,\ I\ looked,\ and\ beholde,\ the\ Temple\ of\ the\ tabernacle\ of\ testimonie\ was\ open\ in\ heauen.} \ 6 \text{And\ the\ seuen\ Angels\ came\ out\ of\ the\ Temple,\ which\ had\ the\ seuen\ plagues,\ clothed\ in\ pure\ and\ bright\ linnen,\ and\ hauing\ their\ breasts\ girded\ with\ golden\ girdles.} \ 7 \text{And\ one\ of\ the\ foure\ beastes\ gaue\ vnto\ the\ seuen\ Angels\ seuen\ golden\ vials\ full\ of\ the\ wrath\ of\ God,\ which\ liueth\ for\ euermore.} \ 8 \text{And\ the\ Temple\ was\ full\ of\ the\ smoke\ of\ the\ glory\ of\ God\ and\ of\ his\ power,\ and\ no\ man\ was\ able\ to\ enter\ into\ the\ Temple,\ till\ the\ seuen\ plagues\ of\ the\ seuen\ Angels\ were\ fulfilled.}

16

1 \text{And\ I\ heard\ a\ great\ voyce\ out\ of\ the\ Temple,\ saying\ to\ the\ seuen\ Angels,\ Go\ your\ ways,\ and\ powre\ out\ the\ seuen\ vials\ of\ the\ wrath\ of\ God\ vpon\ the\ earth.} \ 2 \text{And\ the\ first\ went\ and\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ vpon\ the\ earth: \ and\ there\ fell\ a\ noysome,\ and\ a\ grieuous\ sore\ vpon\ the\ men,\ which\ had\ the\ marke\ of\ ye\ beast,\ and\ vpon\ them\ which\ worshipped\ his\ image.} \ 3 \text{And\ the\ second\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ vpon\ the\ sea,\ and\ it\ became\ as\ the\ blood\ of\ a\ dead\ man: \ and\ euery\ liuing\ thing\ dyed\ in\ the\ sea.} \ 4 \text{And\ the\ third\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ vpon\ the\ riuers\ and\ fountaines\ of\ waters,\ and\ they\ became\ blood.} \ 5 \text{And\ I\ heard\ the\ Angel\ of\ the\ waters\ say,\ Lord,\ thou\ art\ iust,\ Which\ art,\ and\ Which\ wast: \ and\ Holy,\ because\ thou\ hast\ judged\ these\ things.} \ 6 \text{For\ they\ shed\ the\ blood\ of\ the\ Saints,\ and\ Prophets,\ and\ therefore\ hast\ thou\ giuen\ them\ blood\ to\ drinke: for\ they\ are\ worthy.} \ 7 \text{And\ I\ heard\ another\ out\ of\ the\ Sanctuarie\ say,\ Euen\ so,\ Lord\ God\ almightie,\ true\ and\ righteous\ are\ thy\ judgements.} \ 8 \text{And\ the\ fourth\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ on\ the\ sunne,\ and\ it\ was\ giuen\ vnto\ him\ to\ torment\ men\ with\ heate\ of\ fire,} \ 9 \text{And\ men\ boyled\ in\ great\ heate,\ and\ blasphemed\ the\ Name\ of\ God,\ which\ hath\ power\ ouer\ these\ plagues,\ and\ they\ repented\ not,\ to\ giue\ him\ glorie.} \ 10 \text{And\ the\ fifth\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ vpon\ the\ throne\ of\ the\ beast,\ and\ his\ kingdome\ waxed\ darke,\ and\ they\ gnawed\ their\ tongues\ for\ sorowe,} \ 11 \text{And\ blasphemed\ the\ God\ of\ heauen\ for\ their\ paines,\ and\ for\ their\ sores,\ and\ repented\ not\ of\ their\ workes.} \ 12 \text{And\ the\ sixth\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ vpon\ the\ great\ riuer\ Euphrates,\ and\ the\ water\ thereof\ dried\ vp,\ that\ the\ way\ of\ the\ Kings\ of\ the\ East\ should\ be\ prepared.} \ 13 \text{And\ I\ sawe\ three\ vnicleane\ spirits\ like\ frogs\ come\ out\ of\ the\ mouth\ of\ that\ dragon,\ and\ out\ of\ the\ mouth\ of\ that\ beast,\ and\ out\ of\ the\ mouth\ of\ that\ false\ prophet.} \ 14 \text{For\ they\ are\ the\ spirits\ of\ deuils,\ working\ miracles,\ to\ go\ vnto\ the\ Kings\ of\ the\ earth,\ and\ of\ the\ whole\ world,\ to\ gather\ them\ to\ the\ battell\ of\ that\ great\ day\ of\ God\ Almighty.} \ 15 \text{(Beholde,\ I\ come\ as\ a\ theefe.\ Blessed\ is\ he\ that\ watcheth\ and\ keepeth\ his\ garments,\ least\ hee\ walke\ naked,\ and\ men\ see\ his\ filthines)\ 16 \text{And\ they\ gathered\ them\ together\ into\ a\ place\ called\ in\ Hebrewe\ Arme-gedon.} \ 17 \text{And\ the\ seuenth\ Angel\ powred\ out\ his\ vial\ into\ the\ ayre: \ and\ there\ came\ a\ loude\ voyce\ out\ of\ the\ Temple\ of\ heauen\ from\ the\ throne,\ saying,\ It\ is\ done.} \ 18 \text{And\ there\ were\ voyces,\ and\ thundrings,\ and\ lightnings,\ and\ there\ was\ a\ great\ earthquake,\ such\ as\ was\ not\ since\ men\ were\ vpon\ the\ earth,\ euuen\ so\ mightie\ an\ earthquake.} \ 19 \text{And\ the\ great\ citie\ was\ deuided\ into\ three\ partes,\ and\ the\ cities\ of\ the\ nations\ fell: \ and\ that\ great\ Babylon\ came\ in\ remembrance\ before\ God,\ to\ giue\ vnto\ her\ the\ cup\ of\ the\ wine\ of\ the\ fiercenesse\ of\ his\ wrath.} \ 20 \text{And\ euery\ yle\ fled\ away,\ and\ the\ mountaines\ were\ not\ found.} \ 21 \text{And\ there\ fell\ a}
great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

17

1 Then there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come: I will shewe thee the damnation of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters, 2 With whom haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication. 3 So he caried me away into the wildernes in the Spirit, and I saw a woman sit vpon a skarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, which had seuen heads, and tenne hornes. 4 And the woman was arayed in purple and skarlet, and gilded with golde, and precious stones, and pearles, and had a cup of gold in her hand, full of abominations, and filthines of her fornication. 5 And in her forehead was a name written, A mysterie, that great Babylon, that mother of whoredomes, and abominations of the earth. 6 And I saw ye woman drunken with the blood of Saintes, and with the blood of the Martyrs of IESVS: and when I saw her, I wondere with great marueile. 7 Then the Angel saide vnto me, Wherefore marueilest thou? I will shewe thee the misterie of that woman, and of that beast, that beareth her, which hath seuen heads, and tenne hornes. 8 The beast that thou hast seene, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomles pit, and shall goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth, shall wonder (whose names are not written in the booke of life from the foundation of ye world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. 9 Here is the mind that hath wisdome. The seuen heads, are seuen mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seuen Kings. 10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come: and when he commeth, he must continue a short space. 11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight, and is one of the seuen, and shall goe into destruction. 12 And the tenne hornes which thou sawest, are tenne Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shall receiue power, as Kings at one hour with the beast. 13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast. 14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall overcome them: for he is Lord of Lordes, and King of Kings: and they that are on his side, called, and chosen, and faithfull. 15 And he said vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. 16 And the tenne hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire. 17 For God hath put in their heartes to fulfill his will, and to doe with one consent for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God be fulfilled. 18 And that woman which thou sawest, is that great citie, which reigneth ouer the kings of ye earth.

18

1 And after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glorie. 2 And he cryed out mightily with a loud voyce, saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great citie, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the holde of all foule spirits, and a cage of euery vnclene and hatefull birde. 3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the
abundance of her pleasures.  

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen say, Goe out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receiue not of her plagues.  

5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.  

6 Rewarde her, euens as she hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her workes: and in the cup that she hath filled to you, fill her ye double.  

7 In as much as she glorified her selfe, and liued in pleasure, so much giue ye to her torment and sorowe: for she saith in her heart, I sit being a queene, and am no widowe, and shall see no mourning.  

8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and sorowe, and famine, and she shalbe burnt with fire: for that God which condemneth her, is a strong Lord.  

9 And the kings of the earth shall bewayle her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, and liued in pleasure with her, when they shall see that smoke of that her burning.  

10 And shall stand a farre off for feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is thy judgement come.  

11 And the marchants of the earth shall wepee and wayle ouer her: for no man byeth their ware any more.  

12 The ware of golde, and siluer, and of precious stone, and of pearles, and of fine linnen, and of purple, and of silke, and of skarlet, and of all maner of Thyne wood, and of all vessels of yuorie, and of all vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and of yron, and of marble.  

13 And of cinamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine floure, and wheate, and beastes, and sheepe, and horses, and charetts, and seruants, and soules of men.  

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were fatte and excellent, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more)
in heauen, saying, Hallelu-iah, salu-
ation, and glorie, and honour, and
power be to the Lord our God. 2 For
true and righteous are his judg-
ments: for he hath condemned that
great whore, which did corrupt the
earth with her fornication, and hath
auenged the blood of his servants
shed by her hand. 3 And againe
they saide, Hallelu-iah: and that her
smoke rose vp for euermore. 4 And
the foure and twenty Elders, and the
foure beastes fell downe, and wor-
shipped God that sate on the throne,
saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah. 5 Then a
voyce came out of the throne, say-
ing, Prayse our God, all ye his ser-
ants, and ye that feare him, both
small and great. 6 And I heard like
a voyce of a great multitude, and
as the voyce of many waters, and
as the voyce of strong thunders,
saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that
God that almighty God hath reigned.
7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and
guue glory to him: for the marriage
of that Lambe is come, and his wife
hath made her selfe ready. 8 And
to her was granted, that she should
be arayed with pure fine linnen and
shining, for the fine linnen is the
righteousnesse of Saintes. 9 Then he
said vnto me, Write, Blessed are they
which are called vnto the Lambes supper.
And he said vnto me, These
wordes of God are true. 10 And I
fell before his feete, to worship him:
but he said vnto me, See thou doe it
not: I am thy fellowe seruant, and
one of thy brethren, which haue
the testimonie of Iesus. Worship God: for
the testimonie of Iesus is the Spirit of
prophecie. 11 And I sawe heauen
open, and behold, a white horse, and
he that sate vpon him, was called,
Faithfull and true, and he iudgeth
and fighteth righteously. 12 And his
eyes were as a flame of fire, and on
his head were many crownes: and
he had a name written, that no man
knewe but himselfe. 13 And he was
clothed with a garment dipt in blood,
and his name is called THE WORD
OF GOD. 14 And the hostes which
were in heauen, followed him vpon
white horses, clothed with fine lin-
nen white and pure. 15 And out of his
mouth went out a sharpe sword, that
with it he should smite the heathen:
for he shall rule them with a rod of
yron: for he it is that treadeth the
wine presse of the fiercenesse and
wrath of almighty God. 16 And he
hath vpon his garment, and vpon his
thigh a name written, THE KINGS OF
KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. 17 And
I sawe an Angel stand in the sunne,
who cryed with a loude voyce, saying
to all the foules that did flie by the
middles of heauen, Come, and gather
your selues together vnto the supper
of ye great God, 18 That ye may eate
the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of his
Captaines, and the flesh of mightie
men, and the flesh of horses, and of
them that sit on them, and the flesh of
all freemen, and bondmen, and of
small and great. 19 And I sawe the
beast, and the Kings of the earth,
and their hostes gathered together
to make battell against him that sate
on the horse, and against his armie.
20 But ye beast was taken, and with
him that false prophet that wrought
miracles before him, whereby he de-
ceiued them that receiued ye beastes
marke, and them that worshipped
his image. These both were alike
cast into a lake of fire, burning with
brimstone. 21 And the remnant were
slayne with the sword of him that sit-
teth vpon the horse, which commeth
out of his mouth, and all the foules
were filled full with their flesh.

20

1 And I saw an Angel come downe
from heauen, hauing the keye of the
bottomles pit, and a great chaine in
his hand. 2 And he tooke the dragon
that olde serpent, which is the deuill
and Satan, and he bounde him a
thousand yeeres: 3 And cast him into
the bottomles pit, and he shut him
vp, and sealed the doore vpon him,
that he should deceiue the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be loosed for a little season. 4 And I saw seates: and they sate vpon them, and judgement was giuen vnto them, and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the wittnes of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their hands: and they liued, and reigned with Christ a thousand yeere. 5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeeres be finished: this is the first resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy is hee, that hath part in the first resurrection: for on such the second death hath no power: but they shalbe the Priests of God and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeere. 7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shalbe loosed out of his prison, 8 And shall go out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth: euen Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell, whose number is, as the sand of the sea. 9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, and they compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and devoured them. 10 And the deuill that deceived them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet are, and shall be tormentted euen day and night for euermore. 11 And I saw a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found. 12 And I saw the dead, both great and small stand before God: and the bookees were opened, and another booke was opened, which is the booke of life, and the dead were judged of those things, which were written in the bookees, according to their workes. 13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death and hell deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were judged euery man according to their workes. 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. 15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

21

1 And I saw a newe heauen, and a newe earth: for the first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea. 2 And I lohn sawe the holie citie newe Hierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimed for her husband. 3 And I heard a great voice out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them: and they shalbe his people, and God himselfe shalbe their God with them. 4 And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shalbe no more death, neither sorrow, neither crying, neither shall there be any more paine: for the first things are passed. 5 And he that sate vpon the throne, sayd, Behold, I make all things newe: and he sayde vnto me, Write: for these wordes are faithfull and true. 6 And he said vnto me, It is done, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende. I wil giue to him that is a thirst, of the well of the water of life freely. 7 He that overcommeth, shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my sonne. 8 But the fearful and vnbelieuine, and the abominable and murtherers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. 9 And there came vnto mee one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with mee, saying, Come: I will shewe thee the bride, the Lambes wife. 10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great: and an hie mountaine, and he shewed me that
great citie, that holie Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God, 

11 Having the glory of God: and her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as a jasper stone cleare as crystal, 

12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel. 

13 On the East part there were three gates, and on the Northside three gates, on the Southside three gates, and on the Westside three gates. 

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apostles. 

15 And hee that talked with mee, had a golden reede, to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. 

16 And the citie laie four square, and the length is as large as the brevth of it, and he measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousande furlongs: and the length, and the brevth, and the height of it are equall. 

17 And hee measured the wall thereof, an hundreth fourtie and foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angell. 

18 And ye building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the citie was pure golde, like vnto cleare glasse. 

19 And the foundations of the wall of ye city were garnished with all maner of precious stones: the first foundation was jasper: the second of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emeraude: 


21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, and euery gate is of one pearle, and the streete of the citie is pure golde, as shining glasse. 

22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lord God almightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it. 

23 And this citie hath no neede of the sunne, neither of the moone to shine in it: for the glorie of God did light it: and the Lambe is the light of it. 

24 And the people which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the earth shall bring their glorie and honour vnto it. 

25 And the gates of it shall not be shut by day: for there shalbe no night there. 

26 And the glorie, and honour of the Gentiles shall be brought vnto it. 

27 And there shall enter into it none vncheane thing, neither whatsoeuer woorketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in ye Lambes booke of life.

22

1 And hee shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe. 

2 In the middes of the street of it, and of either side of ye riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruits, and gau fruit euery moneth: and the leaves of the tree serued to heale the nations with. 

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but ye throne of God and of the Lambe shall be in it, and his seruants shall serue him. 

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shalbe in their foreheads. 

5 And there shalbe no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euermore. 

6 And he said vnto me, These wordes are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angell to shewe vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be fulfilled. 

7 Beholde, I come shortly. Blessed is hee that keepeth the wordes of the prophets of this booke. 

8 And I am Iohn, which sawe and heard these thinges: and when I had heard and seene, I fell downe to worship before the feete of the Angell which shewed me these thinges. 

9 But he sayde vnto me, See thou doe it not: for I am thy fellowe seruaunt, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes of this booke: worship God. 

10 And he said vnto me, Seale not the wordes
of the prophecie of this booke: for the time is at hand. 11 He that is 
vniust, let him be vniust stil and he 
which is filthie, let him be filthie still: and hee that is righteous, let him be 
righteous stil: and he that is holy, let 
him be holy still. 12 And beholde, I 
come shortly, and my reward is with 
mee, to giue euery man according as 
his worke shall be. 13 I am Alpha and 
Omega, the beginning and the end, 
the first and the last. 14 Blessed are 
they, that doe his commandements, 
that their right may be in the tree 
of life, and may enter in through the 
gates into the Citie. 15 For without 
shall be dogs and enchanters, and 
whoremongers, and murtherers, and 
idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth or 
maketh lies. 16 I Iesus haue sent 
mine Angell, to testifie vnto you these 
things in the Churches: I am the root 
and the generation of Daulid, and the 
bright morning starre. 17 And the 
Spirit and the bride say, Come. And 
let him that heareth, say, Come: and 
let him that is a thirst, come: and 
let whosoeuer will, take of the water 
of life freely. 18 For I protest vnto 
euery man that heareth the words of 
the prophecie of this booke, If any 
man shall adde vnto these things, God 
shall adde vnto him the plagues, that 
are written in this booke: 19 And if 
any man shall diminish of the wordes 
of the booke of this prophecie, God 
shall take away his part out of the 
Booke of life, and out of the holie 
citte, and from those things which are 
written in this booke. 20 He which 
testifieth these things, saith, Surely, 
I come quickly. Amen. Euen so, come 
Lord Iesus. 21 The grace of our Lord 
Iesus Christ be with you all, AMEN.